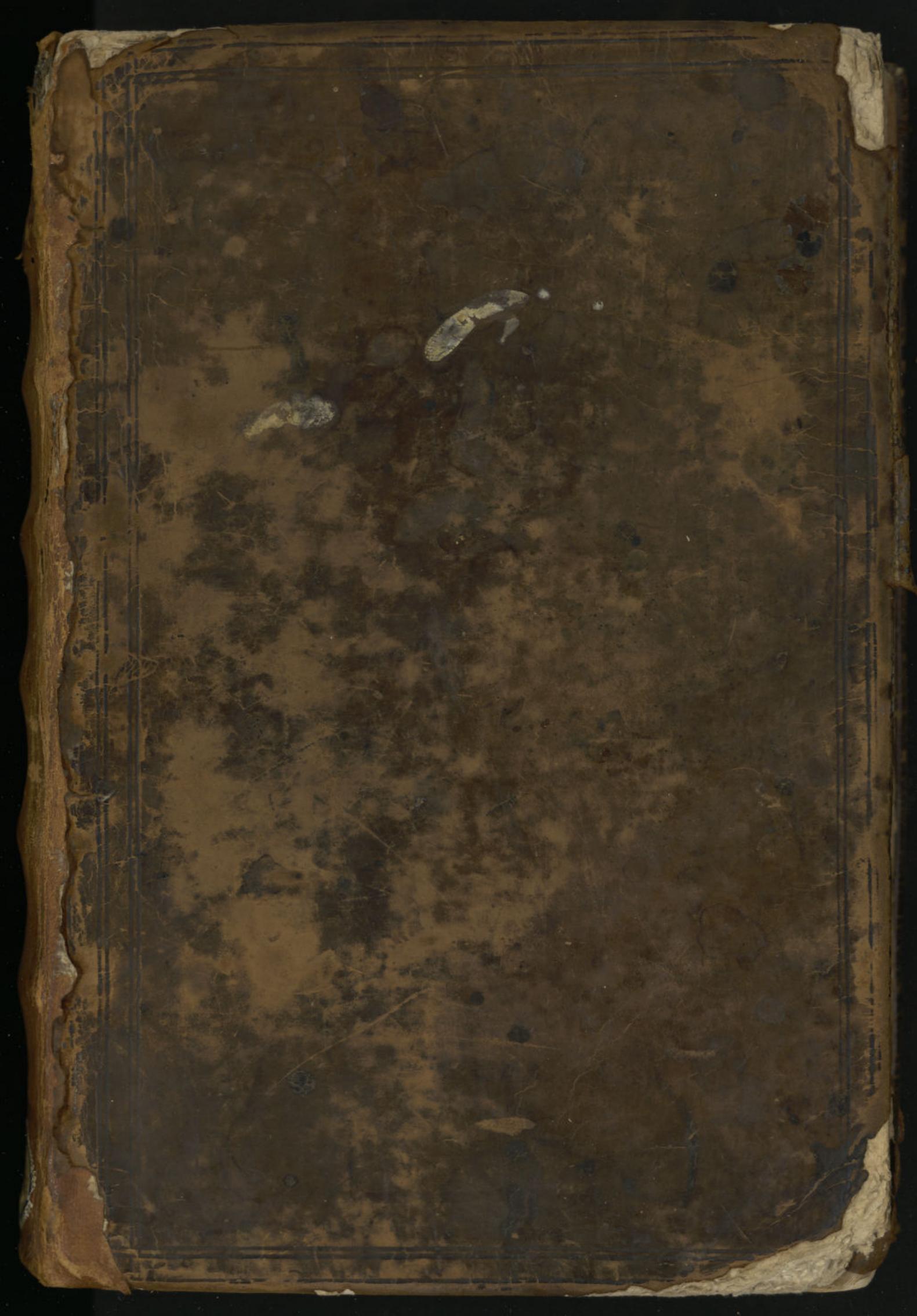


A
8 - 333

Nº A
8 - 333

Nº A
8 - 333





27 a. 4
4

A 1755245X

(2)

A SPANISH GRAMMAR,

FIRST COLLECTED AND
PUBLISHED BY RICHARD PERCIVALE

Gent. Now augmented and increased, with the declin-
ing of all the Irregular and hard Verbs in that Tongue, with diuers
other especiall Rules and necessary Notes for all such as shall
be desirous to attaine the perfection of the
SPANISH TONGUE.

Done by John Minshew Professor of Languages
in LONDON.

HEREVNTO FOR THE YOVNG
beginners learning and ease, are annexed Speeches,
Phrases, and Proverbs, expounded out of diuers Authors, setting
downe the line and the lease where in the same booke they shall finde
them, whereby they may not only vnderstand them, but by
them understand others, and the rest as
they shall meet with them.

Virescit vulnere Virtus.



¶ Printed at London by JOHN HAVILAND for
George Latham. 1623.

A S P A N I S H G R A M M A R

FIRST COLLECTED AND
PUBLISHED BY RICHARD PERCIVAL

Now augmented and corrected, with the addi-
tions of Sir Philip Sidney's speech to the
Queen of Spain, Richard's speech to the
Duke of Alva, &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c.
Also the Spanish Grammar for the use of
Schools, &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c.

Done by John Taylor
in 1600.

HEREBY FOR THE YOUNG

PRINTERS ISSUED, and sete, the annexed Specimens
of the Spanish Tongue, composed of divers Authors,
selected, and printed, to shew the variety of
the language, and to give some practice in reading
and writing, for the use of Schools, &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c.

John Taylor, Printer.



Printed in London by John Haviland
for George Palmer. 1600.

A

H
79
Q



TO THE RIGHT WOR- SHIPFULL GENTLEMEN

Students of GRAYES INNE, health and
happinesse: and to the affected to Languages there, daily
increase, with perfect accomplishment of
the most commendable qualities.



Vcius a famous Roman meeting on a time with the Emperor Marcus, asked him whither he went: who answered, I am going to Sextus, vt discam quod nondum scio, that I may learne that which I doe not yet know. Diogenes the Philosopher went to Athens to Antisthenes to learne of him somewhat that hee was ignorant of; but Antisthenes not willing to impart at that time any of his doctrine, repulsed him: the other left not off his purpose, but more and more importuned him, in such sort, that Antisthenes taking vp a staffe to drive him away, Diogenes stretched out his necke, willing him to strike on hardly, for he shoulde not finde a staffe so hard, that could drive him from him so long as he might learne any matter by him worthie the hearing. I speake this Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, seeing one was an Emperor and might doe what he list, and the other a Cinick Philosopher that would doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or quality, let him bring it to you, and if it be too tedious unto you, or binder your sport, rather than be troubled with him, bob him or flout and scoffe him away. Be not imitators of Demosthenes which spent more oile in the lampe in studying to enrich his minde, than wine to comfort his body; but rather waste your wine and share your candles: neither be so foolish as Cleanthes the Philosopher, that drew water in the night that he mighte follow his studie in the day; rather take your ease in the night and your pleasure in the day, because Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. Yet Gentlemen, if you doe but set before your eies these famous men, which haue beeene and are of the house you now remaine in, (the names of some few I can now recite) as Sir Nicholas Bacon Lord Keeper, Lord Burleigh Lord Treasurer, Sir Walter Mildmay, and Sir Francis Walsingham, learned Fitzherbert Lord chiese Justice of the Common pleas, which abridged the Law, and Sir William Stanfورد, which wrote the pleas of the

To the Gentlemen students of

the crowne, Sergeant Yeluerton, Sergeant Daniel, Sergeant Spurling, Master Brograue, Master Stanhop, Master Hesquit, Master Anthony and Master Francis Bacon, with diuers others, might well moue you to consider that Qui veult plus qu'un autre valoir, doibt plus qu'un autre scauoir: He that will be esteemed aboue another man, must haue more knowledge then another man: And Meglio esser mendicante che ignorante, Better to be a beggar than barren of good letters. But these letters are painfully purchased, why Petit ardua virtus; Difficilis virtutis via; Difficilia quæ pulchra: Therefore Pythagoras counsell'd his familiar friends that they shoulde chuse out the best kinde of life, although the most difficult: and Salust saith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and Seneca affirmeth, that base is that honour which is gotten with idlenesse, which the Roman policy when it flourished confirmed by an ancient law duly kept, that every father that had children of the age of ten yeares should become surety for them, that they shoulde not live idle, or commit any excesse, which was so nearely looked vnto, that they publikely chastised Cato the Censors sonne for a sauciness committed, and banished a brother of good old Ciua for living idle among them. None durst presume to goe into the streets but hee carried some token in his hand what kinde of life or studie he followed, which if in these times it were in force, how many street walkers would retire themselves to some vertuous studies. But me thinke I heare some say, Ars longa & vita brevis, I answer them with the Thebane Philosopher, which in the 75. Olympiade, came to the solemne sports kept about the citie Olympia in honour of Iupiter, who had made all the apparel he ware with his owne hands: his shooes he had sowed, his shirt he had wounen, being demanded where he had learned so many mens arts, answered, In the beginning there was but one art at all, and that the sloth of men had caused that one to be diuided into many, and how every particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in general had knowledge of. To this purpose Pythagoras said, He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beast among men: He that knoweth no more than he hath need of, is a man among brute beasts: He that knoweth all that may be knowne, is a God among men. So many examples present themselves, that rather time would faile than matter herein, and for that my case standeth now rather to demand remedie and not give counsell, or to giue thankes for good turnes received, and not prescribe precepts, I thinke good briesly and plainly to shew vnto you how hauing found my selfe beholding to some of you whom I had read vnto in the tonges, I thought nothing could better agree with my profession as to shew my gratefull minde towards you, than by labouring for your ease, in these instructions of the Spanish tongue: which if they be thankefully received, I shall thinke my labour well imploied. Yet before I could make an end of this and the Dictionarie, I did as Robertus Stephanus saith of himselfe in gathering together his Dictionaries called Thesaurus linguae Graecæ & Latinæ; I haue made Thesaurum, that is, a Treasure for others, but thereby haue made my selfe a beggar, whereof some of the right vertuous and worthy gentlemen of that your house, (to whom I am most beholding, and therefore stand most in affection bound) understanding, wished me to goe forward in so good a worke, and not to giue ouer for some wants: which then of themselves they supplied,

Pythagoras.

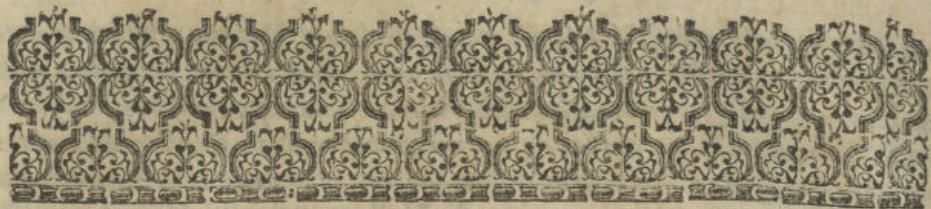
Languages in Grayes Inne.

plied, whose good kindnesse if I forget, I wish the law of Draco, (which was to punish with death, if there were any found so unthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at least to forbear to acknowledge his benefactors for the same) might be inflicted on me: for there can be no greater iniurie offered to a free minde, than to be reputed ingratefull: although in these daies foure as great evils left unpunished as those that are punished, Vntemperatenesse, Vnshamefastnesse, Vnfaithfulnesse, and Vnthankfulness. But to begin with my Benefactors in this worke in order as they began with me in Graies Inne, first Master William Willoughby, a Gentleman as vertuously minded and of as good cariage as the rest: next Master Henry Bing, whose excellent learning, placed together with such gentlemanlike conditions makes him beloued among the Elders, and honourued among the younger sort: after him Master Francis Barneham, and Master Iames Hewes, endued with exceeding good wits, and no lesse good natures: I may not forget the good worths of Master Robert Hill, and Master Cheeke, Gentlemen well studiéd in the most commendable kindes of learning: Master Dauison of excellent learning, wit and vertues: Master Helmes and Master Gill, both for their good parts better knowne than I can heere set downe: Master Thomas Mason, and Master Iohn Roberts, adorned with ornaments of languages, to their other learning and vertues: Master Archer as he is well read in language, so is he a good fauourer of learning. The rest of the well accomplitsh young Gentlemen whom I know not, I say of them as my minde is towards them best: Gentlemen, if for these praises you shall one play on another, I pray you cast all on me, for I protest none of them ever knew that I meant to write vnto them, much lesse put any of their names in print. Thus wishing to you as much as Cicero writing to his friend Atticus, would limit to be wished to his dearest friends, viz. To enjoy health, to posseſſe honour, and neuer to suffer want, I rest

At your command

JOHN MINSHEU.

M m



TO THE READER.

If it be vanity and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches together, when he knowes not whether he be wise or foolish that shall enjoy it: we may thinke the sweat of our spirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogether vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will proue sober or franticke, to whom we leauue the possession of our trauels. But the Spaniard saith, *Quien de miedo se murió de cagazones le hizieron la sepultura*; and because as the Italian saying is, *A molti puzza l'ambro*, Amber is accounted stinking by many: and *Dal asino non ne ha che calzi & petti*: I am resolued for this once to put on Merchants eares, to heare with patience euery mans speech and dispraisings of his wares, because *Quot homines tot sententiae*, So many men, so many mindes. Therefore he that should leauue off any good worke for any mans ill speech, may well be likened to that poore silly fellow, which on a time went with one of his sonnes with his Asse before him to the wood, to fetch him a load thereof for his wife and children; and meeting trauellers by the way, some misliking with him that he should goe on foot, and let his Asse goe leere; others, that he road himselfe, and suffered his childe to goe a foot; others, that he loaded the poore Asse with two persons, being scarce able to carrie himselfe; others, when he left his sonne alone riding, and himselfe goe on foot; in such sort that the countrey fellow could not tell what to doe, seeing doe what he could, still he found reprehenders: whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned sad home to his house without wood, where he remained for feare of fault-finders, till he and his houshold were neere starued with cold, till at last finding his owne simplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as hee met by the way, he said, *He that passeth for other mens speeches and repreffes, endureth cold and a thousand grieses*; and he that will throw a stone at every dogge, shall haue a weary arme: but I hope, *Qui bien ferá, bien aurá*: And for all the dogs barking, the Moone will stand where it did. And I say to the malicious, *Mets ta main sovent en ton sein, & tu ne mesdirás de ton prochain*. And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli avien quel che non crede*: According to a History I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers sonne for his cupbearer: The Emperors Steward and vncle, for enuie perswaded the cupbearer that his breath did stinke, and wished therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedy were found: forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his Court,

by

To THE READER.

by saying his breath did stinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewise told him how he should see the cup-bearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperor conceived such wrath against him, (as the saying is, The anger of a Prince the messenger of death) that hee sent expresse command to his burners of bricke, that they should burne that man that came vnto them first the next morrow; and likewise commanded his cup-bearer to be there so early that none might bee before him: on the morrow morning very early the cup-bearer going, and passing by a Church in the way, went in and fell into such a sound sleepe, that it was the afternoone before he could awake. The Steward in the meane time to see the euent of the Cup-bearer, went and was burned himselfe aliue. The cub-bearer at his retурne signified to the Emperor what had hapned, and also was desirous to know of the Emperour why he should send him thither, &c. If neither Histories nor reason perswade them,they must needs be answered with silence, and so gentle Reader I rest silent from troubling thee or them here-with any longer, more grieved at my mishap and disabilitie, than wanting good will or liking to doe thee seruice. *Hac raptim. Vale.*

JOHN MINSHUE.

M m 2

In opus M. Minsheui edendum,

Iohannis Keperi generosi

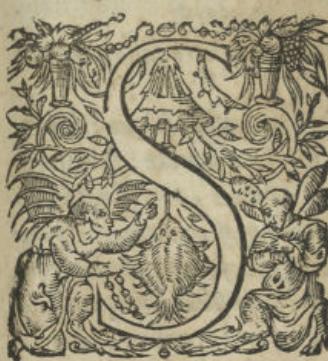
Ecclasiogr.

*Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen Iberi
Vocibus & veris noscere gentis opes,
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,
Hesperiam & totam noscere quisquis aues :
Minshæum legit, lectum (mibi crede) probabis,
Ingenium, genium, munera, verba, fidem :
Qui totidem subiit noctesque diésque labores,
Et flores veluti sedula carpsit apes ;
Qui tibi, qui patriæ, sese sumptumque dicauit,
Edidit, & tantæ sedulitatis opus,
Aut lauda, aut saltem noli mordere, latrando
Zoile, tabificus, ne videare, canis.*

Soneto de un capitán Español
del Autor.

De un diamantino muro circuydo
Con puertas de metal ynpenetrable ;
Y por guarda un dragón fiero espantáble,
Era el huerto de Atlante defendido :
Mas siendo del fuerte Ercules vencido,
Fue abierta la puerta yncontrastable,
Y las pomas de precio ynestimable
Gozaron luego quantos han querido,
Vos Minchen soys el Ercules famoso,
Que a pesar de la ynbidia (dragon fiero)
Abristes puerta al huerto ameno umbroso,
De la yspanica lengua, que primero,
Cerrada estubo alyngles curioso,
Do gozara pomas de oro verdadero.

THE PROEME.



Panish is a speech, whereof in times past (in Spaine) there hath beene foure kinds vsed: The first and ancientest is the Biskaine, which was the speech of the prouince of Biskay and Nuarre: it hath his originall from the Caldean tongue, as the learned in them both affirme, to whom it plainly appeareth that this is of greatest antiquitie.

The next is that which was spoken in the kingdome of Granado, and in part in the kingdomes of Andaluzia, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique, whose originall is the Hebrew almost among them quite worne out, yet to this day they keepe the pronunciation of some of their letters still, as ç, G, j, X, Z.

The third is the Catalan, which is a kinde of French, and had his beginning from the prouince of Gascoigne, from the ancient citie Limojes: they spake this in the kingdomes of Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuica and Cerdina. This Catalan tongue was called Prouençall: and the Italiens confesse that the Prouençals were the first inuentors of their rimes and verses, which are so much prised in Italie where Petraque, Boccace, and Dante, give some testimonie in retaining their words in many places.

The fourth is that which is now at this day commonly vsed and spoken thorow all Spaine, and is called Lengua vulgar, the mother tongue, otherwise Lengua Castellana, or Espaniola, the Castilian or Spanish tongue, principally vsed in Aragon, Andaluzia, Murcia, Castilla, Nueua, and Veja, Leon: also in Portugall, although the Portugall tongue haue such difference in certaine words and pronunciations, that it may well be called a language by it selfe, euen as the English and Scottish, yet in truth, it is not so severed, but that they sprang from one fountaine, and haue one descendance.

This Lengua vulgar, or Spanish tongue, draweth his originall from the Latine or Roman, and because the Roman conquerours were most politicke in prouiding for the continuance of their estates and language to their posterite, by planting where they woon, * Colonies and garrisons; as also not permitting any stranger to the priuiledge of their lawes or freedome of their townes, to buy, sell, or traffique, but in the Roman or Latine tongue, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spanish retaineth still to this day so much of the Latine tongue. And by reason of the Incursion and ouerrunning of so many strange nations, as the Africans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, which ceased not till they had ouerunne the most part of Europe, yet so settled themselves in Andaluzia in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vandaluzia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as also

Four sorts of
Spanishe.

1. Biskayne tongue
most ancient.
This tongue
drawne from
the Caldean.

2. Arabique
tongue in old
time vsed in
Granado, An-
daluzia, Valen-
cia, and Ara-
gon, and yet re-
taine it in the
pronunciation
of these letters,
ç, g, j, x, z.

3. Catalan
tongue or Pro-
uençal, a kinde
of French, had
originall from
Gascoigne, and
was vsed in Ca-
taluna, Malor-
ca, Iuica, Cer-
dina.

4. The Spanish
now vsed.
Difference be-
tweene the Spa-
nish and Portu-
gall tongue.

* A Colonia is a
place unhabited,
whither people
are sent to dwell:
or people sent to
inhabit such
place: or a citie,
the people where-
of once came
from another
cite or countrey.
why the Spanish
keep so much
of the Latine.
Andaluzia,
whereof first so
named.

The Proeme.

Africans inhabiting Mauritania called Moores, whose first comming in, proceeded from the licentious living and unbridled lust of Don Rodrigo then king, in dishonouring and deflowering a Ladie called Cava the daughter of Earle Julian, one of his Nobles.
How the Moores
first entred and
conquered Spain.
Cbro of Spaine.

By meanes hereof, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his owne first propertie and nature, admitting words, accents, and pronunciations of other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the Latine and above named tongues: but yet so, that it hath much more of the Latine than of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine tongue altered or corrupted.

For Spanish words comming from the Latine, marke the table here following and their like.

Spanish words drawne from the Moorish tongue begin much with Al, as Alcúza, a vessell for oyle: Alfidél, or Alfiler, a pin: Almúd, a measure, a pecke: Algurísmo, Arithmetiche: Almoháda, a pillow, &c. or in ç, as çaherír, to upbraid, çahórda, a hogstie: or sound on r, or x, Almaráxa, an ewer of glasse: Xabón, soape: Almoradúx, marjoram: Arredrár, to driue away: Arré尔de, fourre pound weight, &c. also in z, as Zagál, a shepherd. And at this day the Moores in speaking Spanish say juro a Dios, I sweare by God, they say jureux a Deux: for Hombre, they say Homber: for Vuéstra mercéd, your worship or mastership, they say Voxár merxe.

Generall

*General Observations from the Latine for
the framing of the S P A N I S H.*

Substantives of the Latines in *as*, as

| | | |
|--------------------------|-------------|---------------------|
| <i>Charitas,</i> | in Spanish, | <i>Caridád.</i> |
| <i>Maiestas,</i> | | <i>Magestád.</i> |
| <i>Crudelitas,</i> | | <i>Crueldád.</i> |
| <i>Ciuitas,</i> | | <i>Ciudad.</i> |
| <i>Fidelitas,</i> | | <i>Fedelidád.</i> |
| <i>Securitas,</i> | | <i>Seguridád.</i> |
| <i>Obscuritas,</i> | | <i>Escuridád.</i> |
| <i>Conformatas,</i> | | <i>Conformidád.</i> |
| <i>Calamitas,</i> | | <i>Calamidád.</i> |
| <i>Voluntas, &c.</i> | | <i>Voluntád.</i> |

The most part of words in
Latine beginning with
Pl, changed in Li, as

| | | |
|----------------|-------------|----------------|
| <i>Plenus,</i> | In Spanish, | <i>Lleno.</i> |
| <i>Planus,</i> | | <i>Llano.</i> |
| <i>Pluvia,</i> | | <i>Lluvia.</i> |
| <i>Plaga,</i> | | <i>Llága.</i> |

In like sort F. turned into H, as

| | | |
|------------------|----------|-----------------|
| <i>Facere,</i> | Spanish, | <i>Hazér.</i> |
| <i>Faba,</i> | | <i>Háva.</i> |
| <i>Fex,</i> | | <i>Héz.</i> |
| <i>Falco,</i> | | <i>Halcón.</i> |
| <i>Farina,</i> | | <i>Harina.</i> |
| <i>Fator,</i> | | <i>Hedór.</i> |
| <i>Formosus,</i> | | <i>Hermoso.</i> |
| <i>Ferrum,</i> | | <i>Hiérro.</i> |

The Latine ending in *io*,
made Spanish by put-
ting n to it, as

| | | |
|------------------|----------|-------------------|
| <i>Educatio,</i> | Spanish, | <i>Educación.</i> |
| <i>Religio,</i> | | <i>Religión.</i> |
| <i>Electio,</i> | | <i>Elección.</i> |

The Latine ending in
tum, by changing um
into o, as

| | | |
|----------------------|----------|---------------------|
| <i>Ornamentum,</i> | Spanish, | <i>Ornaménto.</i> |
| <i>Experimentum,</i> | | <i>Experiémnto.</i> |
| <i>Exemplum,</i> | | <i>Exémplo.</i> |

The Latine ending in *lis*,
by taking away *is*, as

| | | |
|-------------------------|----------|------------------|
| <i>Materialis,</i> | Spanish, | <i>Materiál.</i> |
| <i>Finalis,</i> | | <i>Finál.</i> |
| <i>Subtilis,</i> | | <i>Sutil.</i> |
| <i>Debilis, &c.</i> | | <i>Débil.</i> |

The Latine ending in
the Infinitive mode
in e, by taking away
e by Apocope, as

| | | |
|-------------------|----------|------------------|
| <i>Castigare,</i> | Spanish, | <i>Castigár.</i> |
| <i>Amare,</i> | | <i>Amar.</i> |
| <i>Tenere,</i> | | <i>Tenér.</i> |
| <i>Perdere,</i> | | <i>Perdér.</i> |
| <i>Sentire,</i> | | <i>Sentír.</i> |
| <i>Salire.</i> | | <i>Salír.</i> |

By adding to the end of a word by Paragoge, as

| | | |
|------------------|-----------------|----------------------|
| <i>Apostema,</i> | <i>Spanish,</i> | <i>Apostemacion,</i> |
| <i>Appetere,</i> | <i>Spanish,</i> | <i>Apetecér,</i> |
| <i>Anas,</i> | <i>Spanish,</i> | <i>A'nade.</i> |

By adding to the middle of a word by Epenthesis, as

| | |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| <i>Certum,</i> | <i>Cielo.</i> |
| <i>Cælum,</i> | <i>Cielo.</i> |
| <i>Membrum,</i> | <i>Miémbro.</i> |
| <i>Messis,</i> | <i>Miesse.</i> |

By adding to the beginning of a word by Prothesis, as

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------|
| <i>Plumescere,</i> | <i>Emplumecér.</i> |
| <i>Capistrare,</i> | <i>Encabistrár.</i> |
| <i>Scala,</i> | <i>Escala.</i> |
| <i>Scandalum,</i> | <i>Escándalo.</i> |

By changing a letter by Metathesis, in the middle of a word, of the second person plurall of the Imperative mood, as D and L changing places, as for Castigadle, they write Castigalde, for Dezidle, they say and write Dezilde.

The Spanish sheweth his original from the Latine, although by corruption many words have changed letters, as in these following & their like, as

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| a | e | Lac, milke, Léche. <i>Casus, chése, Queso.</i> |
| b | u | Barba, a beard, <i>Bárva.</i> |
| c | g | <i>Bibo, I drinke, Pévo.</i> |
| i | h | Amicus, a friēd, <i>amigo.</i> |
| e | y | <i>Acutus, Sharp, agudo.</i> |
| f | | <i>Directus, directed, derigido.</i> |
| | | <i>lectus, read, leydo.</i> |
| g | | <i>Ferrū, irō, hierro, facere, to make or do, hazér.</i> |
| | | <i>Regnum, a kingdome, Reyno.</i> |

No difficultie
in the Spanish
tongue or other
vulgar tongaes
comming from
the Latine.

I proced no further herein, but leave every Latinist to consider of them as he shall meet with them by reading, whereby he shall manifestly perceine by the multitude of words in this tongue derived from the Latine, how easie it is for every meane scholler spedily to obtaine the knowledge of the same, and with these rules and precepts, which here I shall set downe, I doubt not but that every one (desirous thereof) may with facilitie and shorē time speake it and write it more than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the best order (according to the saying, *Qui bene dividit bene docet.* He that divideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to divide this present Grammar, into Orthographie, Prosodie, Etymologie, and Syntaxis, of which though I shall not deale with all of all that may be said, yet at least that shall be necessary to be said for the instruction of the learner in this tongue.

OF ORTHOGRAPHIE

Of Grammar and hir parts.

Grammer, is an art teaching the right rules of true speaking and writing, and it is derived from the Greeke word γραμμα, which is litera, as much as to say, scientia literaria, a knowlēdge of letters.

5

Division of Grammar.

Grammer, according to Quintilian, is twofold: Historicall and Methodicall.
Historicall, gotten by imitation of Authors.
Methodicall, is taught by precepts, which only we here handle.

Subdivision of Grammar.

Grammer Methodicall is diuided into four parts, Orthography, Prosody, Etymology, and Syntaxis.

Division of Grammar.

Orthography, conuersant in letters.

Prosody, in syllables.

Etymology, in words.

Syntaxis, in sentences.

Orthography, of the Greeke word ὁρθός right, γραφή writing.

Proprietie of the four parts of Grammar.

Prosodia, of τέλος, i. ad., & ὁρθός, Canthus, that is, Accentus.

Definition of Orthographic.
Definition of Orthopædia.

Etymologia, of Ετυμος, true, λόγος speach.

Syntaxis, of σύν, i. con, & τάσιον, ordino, quasi, coordinatio.

Orthography is a right rule of true writing, as before of ὁρθός right, γραφή writing, whereby every word is to be set downe with his true letters, as Ciero, certaine, not Siero.

Hereto belongeth Orthopædia, which is a right rule of true speaking, of ὁρθός right, η̄πης word, that in speaking men pronounce not more grosse or smal, then the nature of language wil allow, or otherwise then the accustomed manner of pronunciation vsually permitted therein, as Vino, wine, not to pronounce it as Englishmen doe, Veino, but smaller as they pronounce the double ee, Veeno, Dios, God, not Deios, but Dheeos. But of this hereafter in the letters moze at large.

And because Orthographic (the former part of our Grammar) chiefly consisteth in the true writing of every word with his right letters: It must of necessarie follow, that whosoever speaketh, or heareth a tongue spoken in his proper Idioma, and would write downe the same so spoken, that he know the power and proprietie of each letter in that tongue (because of letters are framed syllables, and of syllables are made words, and of words the whole speach, and language) the which neglected, must needs bring a confusion to the learner, and little or no fruit to the Teachers labour. Therefore to our purpose.

The force of letters.

There are in the Spanish tongue 27. letters, whereof 24. are single, and threē double.

Letters.
Double letters.

The single, A.b.c.c.d.e.f.g.h.i.j.k.l.m.n.o.p.q.r.s.t.v.x.y.z.

Nota.

The double are theſe, ch. ll. fi.

If any aske the question, why the Spanish, being descended from the Latine, hath in it more letters then the Latine: I answer, that although it be now (for the most part of words therein) corrupt and broken Latine, yet it had at the first (as in the Proeme before going) his originall from the Caldean, Arabique, and Moores tongue, of which they reserve some* letters.

* c,g,j,x,z.

But now to our letters as they are in order in the Alphabet or crosse row, without beginning with the vowels, and then skipping from one consonant to another, distracting the memozie of the young beginner in a tongue, which would much better retaine the precepts given thereon, so they might not be driven to a new order of reckoning their letters, differing from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be drawne from.

A Is sounded plainly, with opening the mouth as in the Latine, French, and Italian, as in English, man, can: so in Spanish, Manáda, a flocke, Ensaláda, a salade of herbs.

B Is as the Latine, and is called *litera labialis*, one of the labials or lip letters, because it cannot be pronounced without ioyning the lips together. It is pronounced as in English, baker, basket: so in Spanish, Bacia, a bowle, Bárro, clay, but in the middest of a word, except the word come of the Latine, the Spaniard vsually confoundeth it with V consonant, and soundeth

Of Orthographic in Letters.

B and V consonant, written and pronounced one for another.

Nota.

B cast away.

C cast away.

ç pronounced as the Italian z.
ç pronounced as English Th.

D pronounced as Dh.

Ga.
Go, Gu.
Gua.

Gue, Gui, like
Ghe, Ghi.

Ge, Gi, je,
ji, which is as
in English she,
hi.

G and j consonant written one for another.

soundeth it as V consonant, as Trabájo, trauell, they pronounce Travájo; Palábras, wordes, they sound Palávras; Cábra, a goat, Cávra; Labór, labour, Lavór; Albárda, a pack saddle, Alavárda; Alabárda, a halbard, Alavárda: so oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Baylár, to dance, Vaylár; Basquina, a petticoat, a kirtle, Valsquiná; Bellota, an acorne, Vellotá; Berméjo, red colour, Verméjo; Bexica, a bladder, Vexica. Wherefore I advise the studious in the Spanish tongue, if he finde not a word in the Dictionarie, in one of these letters, let him turne to the other: as if he finde not Bayo, which is used in god Authors for Bay coloured, or Bayard, let him looke Vayo, and there he shall find the same: If not Vañar, to bathe, looke Bañar: If not Voz, looke Bóz, a voice.

B In the middest of a word going before another consonant, and making the pronunciation harder, is cut off in Spanish, as Subtil, they write, Sutil, Absénte, Ausénte, Obscuro, Oscuro, or Escuro.

C This letter hath two manner of soundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o or u follow it, he is sounded as k, as in Cára, a face, Cocco, weuell, Cuchára, a spoone: so likewise in the middle of a word, as Descánlo, rest, Escoria, vrossse, Escudilla, a dish: but going before e or i pronounce almost as the Italian z, as Prudentia, Iustificatione, Cecina, powdered flesh, Ciruelá, a plum.

C Before t, cut off, as Acto, an act: the Spaniard saith A'to: Pacto, a covenant, Pato.

Marked with a dash under it thus, ç, called ç Cerilla, or ç Cedilla, is proper to the Arabique tongue, from whence it was first taken: it is sounded by putting the tongue to the rankes of the teeth, as the French ç, Viença, or very neare: the Italian z, as Diligenza, Scienza. This ç must be so pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though a o or u follow: and is sounded as in English Ths, as garaguëlls, great gascoine or Spanish hose, gogobras, croise blowes of fortune, çüfre, brimstone: pronounce Thsaraguëlls, Thsobras, Thsiture, in like manner before e and i, as çenogiles, garters, ciento, a hundred: pronounce Thsenogiles, Thsiénto.

D Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latine, French, and Italian: as in English, Dagger, Doctor: so in Spanish, Diga, a dagger, Dóze, a dozen: this word Dios is except from this rule, and is pronounced as these that follow, that is, if d come in the middest or end of a word, you must pronounce him as ð in Greek, as dh in English, as Cada, terry, Cada, fidelidad, fidelity, fidelity.

E Is as the Latine, and the Italian, and as in English, Bend, Lend: so in Spanish, Bendizir, to blesse, Bevir, to drinke: and it must never be sounded so small as the English ee, as ee, ee: nor so broad as the French doe their e feminine, as Femme, a woman, pronounced Famma, but betwixt both as first aboue.

F Is as the Latine and the Italian tongues, and inst as the English. The Spaniard writes him when the Latines write Ph, as Philosophus, in Spanish Filosofo.

G Unswervable to the Hebrew Gimel, & hath two maner of soundings according to the vowels which follow it, if a o or u immediatly follow, it is pronounced as in the Latine, Gabriel, Gorgias, Gubernator: Italian, Galante, Gotta, Gustare: French, Garçon, Gourmand: as in English, Gate, Gold, Gutter: so in Spanish, Gáfo, a lazor, a leper, Gófo, rude, Gúla, gluttonie. But if after the u immediatly come a, as Guante, a glove, sound Gwante: Agua, water, Agua: Mengua, want, Mengwa.

But if after u follow e or i, pronounce as the French Guerre, Guide: as in English Guest, guide: so in Spanish Guerra, warre, Guia, a guide: sound Gherra, Ghia, except these words following, Guero, adle, Aguero, soothsaying, Garguero, the throat, Sirguero, a drawer or tower of a boat with a roape, Hoguero, a woodpile, Triguero, a sparrow that lieth in the wheat, Cigüeña, a stork, Pedigüeno, wanton, Halaguéño, flattering, Siguénça, a citie of Spaine, Vergüenza, shame, Aguélo, a grandfather, Deguollo, a beheading, Regueldo, belking, Vnguento, ointment: and words that come of the infinitive mode in Guár, as Enxaguár, to water, Enx. gue, Menguár, to want, Mengue.

G Before e or i is sounded as the Latine Gero: Italian, Giorno: French, Gisant: English, Gefrey, Giles: or more like the Spanish, called j jota, or j consonant, which is pronounced as sh in English: so they say Gémir, to groane, pronouncing as it were written in English hemir. Gingibre, ginger, shinshibe.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in speaking of this G before e and i, from the j consonant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Lináge, Menságe, Lisongéro, Magestád, or Ajéno, Lináje, Mensáje, Lisónjero, Majestád.

G Before n in the middle of a word lost, as Ignominia, Inonsinia, ignominie, Ignorancia, Inorancia, ignorance.

H This letter is neither bowell nor consonant, but a note of aspiration, it is called in the Spanish as in the English Ache, which were moze properly in my opinion to be called as some

Of Orthographie in Letters.

7

some nations doe Ha, because it doth so imort in pronouncing as in English, Harmes, Harnes, Hate, Hang.

This H in the beginning of a word is pronounced in Spanish with more vehemencie and emphasis, & in the middle or end of a word weakly and faintly. H in beginning of a word.

In the beginning he must be pronounced with more force, or else there would be no difference found in speaking these words, and their like, Háca, a nagge : Acá hither : as Ven acá, come hither, Hasta, batill, and Asta for a speare : Haya, a beech tree : A'ya, a nurse : Hufo, a spindle : U'fo, vse.

In the middle of a word not so forcible, as Ahechár, pronounce as Achár, Alholí, Alolí, a barne or garner. H in middle of a word.

This H goeth before all the five vowels, as Hazér, to make or doe: Hécho, made or done : Higado, the liner : Hollin, the root of a chunney : Hufo, a spindle. But it may not in true Spanish orthographic be written before a consonant, as Cristo, not Christo.

Besides it is lost after T, as Ortografia, not Orthografia, Teólogo, not Théólogo. H taken away.

With P also n is lost, and the P turned into F, as Filósofo, not Philosopho, which they must ob-

serue that would write the Spanish tongue aright in all that are like these.

Where Ue followeth H, it is pronounced as W, Huerto, an orchard : Huélio, a bone : pronounce Huerto, Wuelio : or as if G went before thus, Gwerto, Gwello, which I take to be more fit for the Englishmans pronunciation for these and the like words. Hue pronounced as Wue.

That word which beginneth with H, shall not have H in the middle, except C goe before it, as in Hécho, made, Hechizár, to bewitch, and the like.

There be thre kindes of I in the Spanish, that is, small i, Greeky, and j Jota, or consonant. These two i, y, with a verie small slender sound, as the French and Italiens doe, which is as the double ee in English, wee, shee, see, decree, so in Spanish, Tiráno, a tyrant, Teerano, Vida, life, Veda, & not as Englishmen pronounce Teyráno, yeid, which al other nations mislike in hearing them speaking Latine, saying, Propino tibi, they pronounce Propeino tibi, which I would wish they would but marke, and take notice thereof : for the French, Italian, and Spaniard, doe learne and are taught by their Scholemasters to pronounce the Latine different from their owne tongue, otherwise one nation should not understand another speaking the Latine. But in this tongue as in the Italian and French, they must obserue, except they will fall into the vice of Iotacismus, and be laughed at, and not be understood by strangers when they speake or reade.

This small i is used in a word as a bowell by it selfe, as Tinta, yncle, and in a diphthong, as Smalli. Niéto, a nephew.

Y is put in the beginning of a word before a bowell or consonant, as yo, ya, yr, and in the end Y. as Daréys, Podéys.

Jota or j consonant, which this tongue taketh of the Arabique, is pronounced as in French, J pronounced Jamas, Dejs, Jchan, in English like ih, as Jardin, a garden, Jardin, Jarro, a pot, sharro, ojo, like sh. ancie, Osho, Hoja, a leafe, Hozha : Oveja, a sheepe, Duesha : Abéja, a bee, Abesha : In Se- will and thereabout, they pronounce it not so much in the teeth, but moe in the throat, as Chardin, Charro, Ozho, Hozha, Ovezha, Abezha.

Some authors in the Spanish write these words (yet ill) and the like, with H. Hierusalem, Hierónimo, which shoulde be thus, Jerusalem, Jerónimo.

K The Spaniard never useth this letter but when it is required of the Greeke and proper names then sounded as in the English, as Kalendas.

L, M, N, O, P. Are all pronounced as in the Latine, French, Italian, and inst as in English: But P may not be doubled in Spanish, as Aprovar, to approne, Aperito, appetite, and not Approvár, Appetito. P before T in the middle of a word lost, as Captivo, pronounce Cautivo. P not doubled. P cast away.

Neither can L be doubled in Spanish when the word commeth of the Latine, and keepeth the Latine sound, as Ilustre, in Latine Illustris : Silaba, in Latine Syllabis : Colegio, Collegium. So likewise of N, as Tiráno, not Tiráno, in Latine Tyrannus, but when these keepe not the sound of the Latine, looke hereafter in double LL, H, and there you shall finde how they are pronounced.

O Hath two pronunciations, not of his owne nature, but by reason of a bowell following him.

If u follow, as in Latine and English, Quantitie, Quarter, so in Spanish Quández, when, Quartána, Quál.

But when ue or ui follow, it is to be pronounced as the Italian, Che, Chi, or the French Que, Qui, as English Ke, Ki, as Question, a Question or quarrell, Kestion, Quiéto, quiet, Kie- to, except when the word is Latine, as Delinquente, Eloquente. Que, Qui, pronounced as Ke, Ki.

R With

RWith the Greces and Latines termed *Litera canina*, so the Spaniard calleth him *Letra per-*
rina, the doggish letter, because dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, sound
this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian, and French, but if it be in the be-
ginning of a word it is sounded strongly, as the Grecians doe sound. The Spaniard saith
Káyo, a sun beame, Réy, a king, or if it be doubled in the middest of a word, you cannot sound
with too great vehemencie, as Barro, Clay, Cárra, a Cart. But if it be in the middest of a
word and single, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as ára, an altar, Móro, a blacke
Moore.

S made like a
snake doubled.
with his head
lifted vp.

SWith x, z, and ç, are pronounced (although the one more plaine and sounding, and the rest
lesse) by putting the tongue to the rofe of the mouth, and then hissing out the voyce with
the lips open as a snake, and therefore the Greces called this letter S by that hissing name,
as also made it in fashion double as a snake, with his head lifted vp, accordingly is it made
in Latine, Italian, and Spanish. In Spanish these letters are called *Culebrinas*, which
is snakie, of *Culebra*, a snake, which vseth hissing.

This S in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and as in English
Sand, Seeth, Sin, Hod, Sudden, so in Spanish Saber, Sembrar, Sobra, Sudor.
But if S be single in the middest of a word betweene two vowels, then with a gentle sound
almost like Z, as the French doe, adding thereby great grace to their tongue, as Eglise
Church, Causa, so in Spanish, Causa, Rosa, ufo, púlo. But if it be doubled, then strongly, as
in English Crossed, tossed, so in Spanish Fuésemos, grueſſo.

Nota, S never
in begining of
a word except a
vowell follow.

Ti never turned
in Ci in Spanish,
as in other
tongues.

In the end of a word as Z, as Cártas, Letters, Cámaras, Chambers, or going to stolle. And
note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a consonant next follow-
eth. Therefore you must write Espéro, I hope, and not Spéro. Escrivo, I write, and not
Scrivo.

TIs pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French and English, except it can never sound
a, as the Latines, Italians, French and English doe when after i followeth i with a
vowell, as in Latine Prudentia, Italian, Amicitia, French Justification, English Ambition, in
Spanish it must be written Prudencia, Amicicia, Justificación, Ambición, otherwise the
writing were false, and you should pronounce Ti as in Tibi.

Also if H follow T, as Theólogo, Theopómpo, write and pronounce Teólogo, Teopómpo.

U pronounced
broad as ou.

UBeing a bowell not to be pronounced with a small sound as English, Huue, Brue, Crue,
Issue, but as the French doth in his diphthong ou, almost as the English ou, as Tu, ton,
Buche, the maw, Bouche. But being a consonant is pronounced as in other languages in
the beginning of a word, as Vaca, a Cow, Véna, a Veine, Vino, Wine, Vóto, a Vow, Vilgo,
the common people, in the middest of a word as Aváro, Gávia, iua. Also when two uu come
together, and a bowell following, the second is a consonant, as úvo, Túve, except Vuéstro.

X pronounced
as sh.
X and j written
often in Spanish
one for another.

XIs one of the Culebrinas letras, the snakie or hissing letters, as above said in the letter S,
and is pronounced like J consonant, and the Spaniard often writeth one for another, as
Xaráue, Arrup, Jaráue, and is pronounced as the French ch, as the English sh, as Fasa,
a wastband, Bruxa, a hag, Flóxo, Weakhe, Faixa, Brusha, Floscho.

YAs aboue in I.

ZIs called in Spanish Zeta, as the Hebrew Zain, from whence it is drawne, and from the
Moorish tongue, and is pronounced as the English Z, as Zángano, a droane, Zélo, zeale,
Zodiaco, the Zodiacke, so likewise in the end of a word, as Báz, a voice, Críz, a Crosie.

Ch as in Eng-
lish Ch.

U pronounced
as Li.

ñ pronounced
as ni.

Ch Before any of the five vowels to be pronounced as in English, Chapman, Chiefely, Chic-
ken, Chop, Choose: so in Spanish, Chamelote, Chamlet: Chiminea, a Chimney: Chorro,
a brooke: Chusma, a company of people of the common sort.

LlAs gl in Italian, as Cavagli, Moglie, Figli, as double Ll in French, as Fille, Coquille, as Li in Eng-
lish, as Llano, plaine: Llénio, full: Llovér, to raine: Llúvia, raine: pronounce Liáno, Liéno,
Liovér, Liuvia: so likewise in the middle of a word, as Querrelloso, Kerreliso, quarrel-
some: in the end of a word never in Spanish written double, as Mil, a thousand, not
Mil.

ñ As the Italian and French gn, Montagna, Campagna, French Compaignon, Mignan, in Eng-
lish as ni: as Montáño, a mountaine, Montaña, Campána, Campania, so Dáño, losse, Danny,
Báño, a bath, Banny.

Of Orthographie in Diphthongs.

A Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammarians) is a sounding together of two different vowels, as if they were but one only, as in English, Tide, Auditoy. Definition of Diphthongs.

In Spanish there are twelve sorts.

The first in ai, or ay, as gaita, andays, cantáis. But when two vowels come together and make more then one sound, they should be marked over head with two pricks, to take away confusion, as Caída, pronounced Caída, and so the rest.

The second in ao, where a is more sounded then o, as Quartáo, a nag, Saráo, a hall to dance in, Viláo, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the same sort, as Cato maule.

The third in au, where a sounds more then u, as Causa, Autor, Caudillo: except Laúd, a lute, Ataúd, a tombe: La-úd, Ata-úd.

The fourth in ei and ey, where e is more sounded then i, as Réy, a king, Léy, a law: when they are severed, write them with two pricks thus, Leistés, Reir.

The fifth in eu, where e is most perceived, as Féudo, Déudo, Réuma: being disjoined write thus: Reústar, Reúngir.

The sixth in ia, in which a is more heard sound then i, as Saia, Vaia, Malicia, Presencia: except Mia, Dia, Portia, Desvia.

The seventh ie, ye, where e is most heard pronounced, as Viénto, Sciente, Viéne, Bién, Quién, Quiera, Arriéndo, Dispierto, Prieto, Pie, Piédra, Tierra, Ciélo, Infierno, Diéz, Siéte, Miél, Híel.

The eighth in io, or yo, where o is most sounded, as Yo, Dió, Vió: except Mio, Río, Frío, Tío.

The ninth in iu, where i is more heard then the u, as Ciudad, a citie.

The tenth in oi, or oy, as Soy, Doy, Voy, Oygo: except Oy'do, Roy'do.

The eleventh in ue, where e is more sounded then u, as Fuérça, Muérte, Fuérte, Cuerno, Nuevo, Fuégo, Huélgoo, Nuéz, Vihuéla.

The twelfth in ui, and uy, where u is more sounded then the i, as Muy, Fuy, Cuidado, Huíyo.

Foure Rules following shewing how every vowell maketh a

seuerall syllable by himselfe, or is sounded

in diphthong with another.

The first Rule.

If betweene two vowels come h, or a consonant, such vowels cannot ioyne themselves together to make a syllable or diphthong, as Ahínco, Bolár, except Auré, Aurás, Aurá, Aurémos, Auréys, where u and the vowel make a syllable, the like in Auria, Aurámos. The first Rule.

The second Rule.

Any two vowels comming together, neither of them being i nor u, make two syllables, as Nérmias, Poffcer, Roér, except these Hebrew words which end in two ee, as Oseé, Bethlém, Bersabé. The second Rule.

The third Rule.

When the first person of a verbe doth end in two vowels, and the first vowel being i, and the accent stand vpon the same i, then that i maketh a syllable of it selfe without ioyning it selfe with the vowel following, as Embio, Embias, Embia, Embiámos. Porfio, Porfias, Porfian. Espio, Espías, Espian, Confio, Confias, Confia. The third Rule.

The fourth Rule.

But if the word doth end in two vowels, and the first of them being i, and the accent not on the first, then they make both the vowels a diphthong into a syllable, as Grácia, Justicia, Dániel, Ezechíel, Gabriel, Sentencia, Vitória, and in like sort doe they when they haue the accent on the last of them, as Passión, Religión, Nación, Caución, Ración, because they come of words of the Latine that haue their accent in the Antepenultima, therefore must the Spanish haue it in the Ultima. Except these words in Spanish, Anciano, Dioclesiano, Diáblo. The fourth Rule.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is a sounding of three vowels into one syllable with one breath together, and that after five sorts. Definition of a Triphthong.

The first in iai, or yay, as Vayáys, Espaciáys, where a is heard more then i.

The second iey or yey, where e is more sounded then i, as Ensuziéys.

The third in iue or yue, where e is heard more then u, as Hoyuélo, Arroyuélo.

The fourth in uai or uay, as Guáy.

The fifth in uei or uey, as Buéy, Buétre.

Of Prosodia or Accents, the second part of this Grammar.



SOrthographic handleth letters, so Prosodie treateth of syllables, and the right sounding and pronouncing the same with their true accents, which is to make the syllable or word long or short, soft or sharpe, without the which the learner cannot tell how to read or pronounce the tongue, much lesse to be understood when he speaketh the same, whereby he shall be not only disgraced, but be driven to bellow longer time, in forgetting that ill touch taken by, then he might be in going forward in learning five times so much. The which being carefully looked unto at the first, cannot but much adorn the speaker, make himselfe understood, as also give himselfe exceeding comfort in going forward, when he knoweth he singeth true harmony, which cannot but delight those that will listen thereto.

*Description of
Prosodia.*

*Spanish not sub-
ject to Latine
accents.*

*Of the Latine,
the Latine ac-
cent.*

*Words ending in
D, I, N, or R,
accented in the
last syllable.*

*Except these.
Nota.*

Opus laboris.

*Accents in
one word.*

Prosodia, is a rule or knowledge, shewing with what accent every syllable of a word is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not Carcel, a prison.

Many haue affirmed the Spanish tongue to be subiect to the Latine accents, seeing it is for the most part derived from the same, but common speach and use shew the contrary in manie words, as Latine Génesis, in Spanish Genesis, Sódoma, in Spanish Sodoma, Hélona, Heléna, so in Latine ámor, in Spanish amór, autor, autór, Cérasis, Cerézo. But yet note this, that words derived of the Latine doe keepe the accent of the Latine, except some proper names or words ending in d, l, n, or r, as Abstinéncia, Abstinença, Obedientia, Obediencia, Beneficio, Blando, Cadúco, Ceremónia, Culpa, Digno, Dóte, Familia, Fecondo, Furioso, Premio.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the last syllable, as Amistad, Pestilencial, Canclón, Pastór.

Except some few ending in l, n, and r, ángel, ábil, apóstol, árbol, jóven, láor, ánsar, ámbar, acíbar, agúcar, açófar, alcázar, nácar, tibar, cármen, cáncer, carácter, cárcel, Cristóval, cónsul, crímen, débil, decífil, móbil, Immóbil, fócil, dócil, Estérial, estíercol, Fácil, Dátil, Frágil, v'til, inv'til, fertíl, inábil, mátil, márgen, mártir, mármol, Trébol, órden, origen, vírgen, exámen, volumen, imágen, betúmen, Estévan, and verie few or none besides these, for that in setting these downe I ran ouer (as neare as I could) every word in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may conjecture, what paines, trouble, and time, such booke of such method as this haue bestowed on them, before they can come forth to shew to the learner in a moment, that which the composer can hardly find out in a moneth: but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the words generally in the whole Dictionarie whatsoever, to make the beginner, and also the well read to be perfect in the pronunciation, without which he shall be derided, as not understood when he readeth or speaketh.

All nouns in ion, and in or, accent in the last syllable, as Occasión, Predicador, so also in i, s, z, as Alcauci, Cortés, Pertináz, Cerviz, except Adives, a beast in Barbarie like a foxe, which barketh and cryeth in the night as loud as a Foxe.

Although in the Latine there is in no word but one accent dominant, yet in the Spanish often are two found, as Ciéraménta, Fuéraménta, wherefore I will set downe the order of the Spanish accenting, first giving example of those words which continually are accented, then of those which are sometimes, and sometimes not; last of all, those which haue two or three accents.

These words alwayes accented, as

Hé há
y'd y'r
aqui acá
fcd sóy
cál bóz
grán áy
Augustín acullá.

- These words following sometime accented, sometime not, as
- Al, If it be an article, it is not accented, as Dezid al Señor ésto, Tell your master this. But if it be not an article, it is then accented, as Pensáden ál, Thinke on something.
 - Aun, When que followeth it is not accented, as Pedro aunque se pa morir no hará, Peter although he knew he should die, he would not doe it. But asking a question it is then accented, as Aún duérmes Pedro? Doe you sleepe yet Peter?
 - Ante, Being a Preposition is not accented, as Ante Dios estámos, we stand before God. But being an Anduer be it is accented, as Ante vino Pedro que Juán, Peter came before John.

Cerca,

Of Prosodia or Accents.

I

Cerca, a Preposition, not accented, as Cerca todos dás buén exemplo, Those all give good example. But if it be a Verbe, Averbe, or Noun, or this particle De going before or following, then it is accented, as El Rey cerca con su gente, que tiene, cerca de si, la ciudad y la rodada, cerca toda, y tiene la cerca de piedra, y de cerca parece fuerte. The king doth besiege with his people, which he hath about him, the city, and compasseth it all about, neare unto it, which hath his wall of stone, and neare hand it seemeth strong.

Nota.

De mi, A possesive not accented, as De mi párde heredé virtud, Of my father I inherited vertue. But if it be not a possesive it is accented, as De mi hablás segun veo, You speake of me as I perceue.

Del, The article not accented, as Del virtuoso es la virtud amada, Virtue is beloved of the honest. But if it be a Pronoun it is accented, as Dios es bueno y del nos viene el bien, God is god, and from him commeth godnes.

Do, Spoken indefinitely not accented, as Do estuviere el bueno estaré yo, Where the god man shall be, there will I be also. But spoken in asking a question it is accented, as Dó estás Juan? Where is John?

El, Being an Article not accented, as El bueno te re a Dios, The just feareth God. If it be a Pronoun then accented, as Cristo nos ama y el nos redimió, Christ loueth us, and he it is that hath redeemed vs.

Entre, A Preposition not accented, as Entre los santos deseo estar, I desire to be among the godly. But being a Verbe is accented, as Entré Pedro y no Juan, Let Peter enter and not John.

Mas, The Conjunction not accented, as No hagis mal, mas hazd bien, Doe not euill but doe god. But being an Averbe, then it is, as Mas quieto bive, &c. y es más querido, He liveth more at quiet, &c. and is better beloved,

Medio, In composition not accented, as Medio en burlas, m'dio en veras, Halfe in iest, halfe in earnest. If alone, then other wise, as Tened el medio en cosas, Keepe a meane in matters.

Nos, Not accented, as Habla nos Jesus, Christ telleth us. But if it be a nominative case to the verbe then it is, as Nós queremos, We will, &c.

Vn, Not accented, as Vn hombre, A man. But if y the Conjunction goe before, then it is, as Dile pán, y un real, I gaue you bread and six pence.

These words following not accented, as

Alo, Alos, Aunque, Con, De, Dela, Delo, Delas, Delos, Demis, Desde, Desque, Don, Doña, E, En, En mis, Enlo, Enlos, Enla, Enlas, Fray, Y, Lo, Le, Mc, Micer, Mossen, as Micer sancho, y Mossen Pedro vienen, Master Danches and Master Peter comes. Ni, Os, Pero, Pues, Por, Quan, Quel, San, Si, Su, So, Tan, Tal. Allo all the articles while they keepe the nature of Articles, which are these,

| | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| A, al, ala, alo, alas, alos, | o |
| Del, dela, delo, delos, delas, | o |
| El, la, las, Lo, los, le, les, | o |

Words of two Accents.

Altamente, Hártofasta, Buénamente, Piénditamente, Cíertamente, Bienaventuradamente, Dié- Words of two
stramente, Grávamente, Grafiólaménte, Ygualmente, Iuntamente, Luengamente, Magníficamente, Accents.
Razonablemente, Ráramente, Sábiamente.

Words of three Accents.

Muymálaménte, Muybuénamente.

Words of three
Accents.

No 2 OF

Of Etymologic and the Noun.

*Definition of
Etymologie.*



Tymologie, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the Originall of words, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of originall and descendance of words is considered in divers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoeuer, this is so necessarie, that without it, they could not understand or learne it: the which by the Latine Grammarians hath bee, and is called Declension and Conjugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nounes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spanish hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latine.



Of the Noun.

*Primitive.
Deriuatiue.*

Nounes be diuided into Substantives and Adiectives, which are likewise diuided into Primitive, Deriuatiues.

The Primitive, which is not derived of any other, but is Primum, of himself, as Abéja, a Bee.

The Deriuatiue, is drawne from the Primitive, as Abecionizo, a great Bee.

And of like nature to these Primitive nounes, are these Interrogatiues, Redictiues, and Numerals following.

To the Primitive, these following, and the like are subiect, as

The Interrogatiue, as Quién? who? Quál? what manner? Quánto? how much? Quántos? how many?

The Relative which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as tal, such a one, Tantos, so many.

Numerall.

The Numerall to which these kinds following doe belong, as

Cardinall.

Cardinal, from which as from a fountaine the rest doe spring, these doe I wish the learner to have by heart.

*Cardinall
Numerals.*

| | | | | | |
|----|--------------|------|-----------------------|---------|------------------|
| 1 | vno | 21 | veinte uno | 1500 | mil y quinientos |
| 2 | dos | 22 | veynte dos, &c. | 2000 | dos mil |
| 3 | tres | 30 | tréynta | 3000 | tres mil |
| 4 | quátro | 40 | quarenta | 4000 | quátro mil |
| 5 | cíncio | 50 | cinquenta | 5000 | cíncio mil |
| 6 | seýs | 60 | sesenta | 6000 | seýs mil |
| 7 | siéte | 70 | seténta | 7000 | siéte mil |
| 8 | ócho | 80 | ochénta | 8000 | ócho mil |
| 9 | núeve | 90 | novénta | 9000 | núeve mil |
| 10 | díez | 100 | cién, oꝝ ciénto | 10000 | díez mil |
| 11 | ónze | 101 | ciento y vno | 100000 | cien mil |
| 12 | dóze | 200 | dociéntos y dozíentos | 1000000 | millón |
| 13 | tréze | 300 | treziéntos | 3000000 | dos millones |
| 14 | catórce | 400 | quatrocíentos | 3000000 | tres millones. |
| 15 | quínze | 500 | quiníentos | | |
| 16 | diés y seýs | 600 | seýscíentos | | |
| 17 | diéz y siéte | 700 | siéteciéntos | | |
| 18 | diéz y ócho | 800 | ochocíentos | | |
| 19 | diés y nucue | 900 | núeve ciéntos | | |
| 20 | véynete | 1000 | mil | | |

*Ordinall
Numerals.*

The ordinals, which declare the order of a place or time, as Primero, segundo, tercero, quarto, quinto, sexto, séptimo, oꝝ seteno, octavo, nono, oꝝ noveno, décimo, oꝝ dezeno, onzeno, dozeno, trezeno, catorzeno, quinzeno, décimo sexto, décimo séptimo, décimo octavo, décimo nono, veinteno, veinteno uno, veinteno dos, &c. Treinteno, quarenteno, cinquanteno, sesenteno, setenteno, ochenteno, noventeno, centesimo, oꝝ centeno, doscientenos, trescientenos, quatrocientenos, quinientenos, seyclientenos, sietecientenos, ochocientenos, nuevecientenos, milciumo.

partatines

Of Etymologie and a Noun.

13

Partatines which signifie many severally, as Cado uno, every one, Entrámbos, both of them, ni uno, ni otro, neither of them, or one among many, as otro, another, algúno some body.

Universals, as todos, all; ningúno, no body.

Particulars, as Algúno, some body.

Adverbials, ioyning the Cardinall Numerals with this Aduerbe vez, as vna vez, once: dos veces, twice: tres veces, thrise: diez veces, ten times: cien veces, a hundred times: mil veces, a thousand times.

Partatiue numerals.

Vniversal numerals.

Particular numerals.

Adverbiall au-

merals.

Deriuatiues.

Deriuatiues, which haue contained vnder them these following, viz.

Of countries or townes, as Aragonéz, a man of Aragon: Andaluz, a man of Andaluzia: Granadino, a man of the citie or country of Granada: Gadiráno, a man of Cadiz or Caliz.

Of the nation, as Dalmácios, people of Dalmatia: Ingleses, Englishmen, or people of England: Escoceses, Scottishmen: Francéses, Frenchmen: Móros, blacke Moors: Túrcos, Turkes.

words in oso are deriuatiues of their Primitives, as Mentiroso, lying, of Mentira, a lie: Clamoroso, clamorous, of Clamor, clamor, gloriioso, &c.

Of signifying excesse in uido, and ázo, as Baruudo hanting a great long beard, of Barba, jarrázo, a great blow with a cup, of jarro a cup: Papudo, hanting a great wide throat, of Papo a throat: Rodillazo, a great blow with the knee, of Rodilla a knee.

Diminutiues in ico, ito, éta, uela, illa, illo, as Bonico, Bonito, pretty, good: vaquéta, vaquilla, a little cow or heifer, of Vaca a cow: Kopilla a little gowne or cassockie, of Ropa: Calderuélala, a little kettle, of Calderón a kettle: Cardenillo, somewhat black and blew, of Cardeno blacke and blew.

Deriuatiues.

Of countries or townes.

Of the nation.

Deriuatiues from Primitives.

Excessiues in uido, and ázo.

Diminutiues.

Of Numbers.

To Nounes as well Substantives as Adjictives, there are these affectiuns following belonging, Number, Case, Gender.

The Number sheweth the quantity, the Case the qualitie, and the Gender the sex.

Numbers.

There are two Numbers. The Singular and the Plurall.

The Singular speaking of one, as Libro, a booke.

The Plurall of moe, as Libros, bookes.

This is a generall Rule, if the singular number doe end in a bowell, the plurall number is made by putting tos, as Palabra, palabras, Cuérpo, cuérpos, Muerte, muertes, Javali, javalis.

Nota.

Except some few, which must haue es added to them, as Rey, réyes, Léy, léyes, Fe, fées, Buéy, buéyes, so in this manner all nounes ending in consonants must haue es added to them, as Mercéd, mercédes, Ciudad, ciudádes, Mortál, mortáles, Pastór, pastóres, &c.

Of Cases.

The Spanish hath Cases as the Latine, but all in one ending or termination, and are declined with an article, as the Nominative with el la, the Genitive with the Preposition De, as the Italian and French, the Dative Para, the Accusative a, the Ablative as the Genitive, &c.

Of Genders.

There are three. { The Masculine, as El Pádre, the father.
{ The Feminine, as La Mádre, the mother.
{ The Neuter, which is of small use with the Spaniard, as Lo sincero, Lo malo, for they speake by the Substantive, as La Sinceridad, El mal.

Genders.

Rules to know the gender of most part of Nounes.

Nota.

Nounes in l, o, r, Masculine. Exception.

To know the Genders, obserue well these Rules following.
All nounes ending in l, o, or r, are commonly of the Masculine gender, as Cardinal, a Cardinall, Cárdo, a Chistalle, Pastór, a Shepherd. Except la Cárcel, a prison, la Pié, the skin, la Caná, a Gutte, la Equinocial, the Equinoctial, la Nauil, a battell at sea, la Hié, gall, la Sál, Salt, la Mário, a hand.

All Nounes for the most part in a, d, or ion, are of the Feminine gender, as Manteca, Butter, Magestad, Majesté, Deliberación, Deliberation.

Nounes in a, d, ion, feminine.

| | | |
|--|---|--|
| Names of trees commonly the Masculine gender, and the fruits the feminine, as | El Perál, a Peare tree. El Ciruelo, a Plum tree. El Narránjo, an Orange tree. El Cidro, the Citron tree. El Manzano, the Apple tree. El Camués, the Pippen tree. El Cerézo, the Cherrie tree. El Almendro, the Almond tree. El Avellano, the Hazell nut tree. El Castáno, the Chestnut tree. El Nogál, the Walnut tree. El Azeytuno, the Olive tree. El Olivo, idem. El Morál, the Mulberry tree. El Granado, the Pomegranate tree. | La Péra, the Peare. La Ciruela, the Plum. La Narránja, the Orange. La Cidra, the Citron fruit. La Manzana, the Apple. La Camuesa, the Pippen. La Ceréza, the Cherrie. La Almendra, the Almond. La Avellana, the Hazell nut. La Castaña, the Chestnut. La Nuez, the Wall nut. La Azeytina, the Olive. La Oliva, idem. La Mora, the Mulberry fruit. La Granada, the Pomegranate. |
|--|---|--|

Exception.

| | |
|---|--|
| Except these whose tree and fruit are both Masculine, as | El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruit. El Limón, the Lemon tree and fruit. El Alvéchigo, the Apricocke tree and fruit. El Avercoque, idem. El Péró, the tree and fruit of a kinde of Apple, very raw and cold by nature, good to rost, red on one side. |
|---|--|

Another exception.

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| Except these also whose fruit is the Masculine tree the Feminine, as | El Higo, the Fig. El Datil, the Date. El Razimo, the bunch of grapes. | La Higuera, the Fig tree. (tree. La Palmera, the Date tree or Palme La Parra, the Wine, or Lavida. |
|---|---|--|

Verbs in or make themselves feminine by putting to a.

as Habladór, a prater, Habladóra, a she prater.
Likewise Nounes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrádo, honoured; Honráda: Suégra, a father in law, Suégra, a mother in law.

Of Declensions and of the Article.

Declension of the Article.

The Spanish (as likewise the Italian and French) haue but one manner of Declension of declining, that is with the Article, which in Spanish is thus declined:

| | | |
|--------------------------------|---|---|
| Article masculine Sing. | Nom. el. Gen. del, de lo. Dat. Para el, Para lo. Acc. a el, al, alo. Ab. del, delo. | Nom. los. Gen. de los. Dat. para los. Acc. a los. Ab. de los. |
|--------------------------------|---|---|

The Feminine Article thus.

| | | |
|-------------------------------|---|---|
| Article feminine Sing. | Nom. la. Gen. de la. Dat. para la. Acc. al, ala. Ab. de la. | Nom. las. Gen. de las. Dat. para las. Accus. a las. Ab. de las. |
|-------------------------------|---|---|

In the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article Masculine is put oftentimes instead of the Feminine, when the word beginneth with a bowell, as el agua, the water, el alma, the soule: to make the pronunciation more sweet Euphonie gratia, and it may also be put la agua, la alma.

Note. Also in the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article is never separated from Nounes Appellatives, neither in Singular nor Plurall number: as Spanish, el libro, los libros, la cámara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nounes proper it is not vsed so: for it were absurd to say, el Francisco, la Juána: neither is it vsed with this word Dios, except there be ioyned with it some Epitheton, as el Dios todo poderoso, God almighty.

Declining

Declining of a Noun.

| | | |
|------------|---|---|
| All Nounes | <i>Nom.</i> el maestro. <i>Gen.</i> del maestro. are thus de- | <i>Nom.</i> los maestros. <i>Gen.</i> de los maestros. <i>Dat.</i> para el maestro. <i>Acc.</i> a el, oꝝ al maestro. <i>Abl.</i> del maestro. |
| | <i>Sing.</i> | <i>Plu.</i> |

| | | |
|---------------------------|---|---|
| The feminine gender thus, | <i>Nom.</i> la doctrina. <i>Gen.</i> de la doctrina. <i>Dat.</i> para la doctrina. <i>Acc.</i> a la doctrina. <i>Abl.</i> de la doctrina. | <i>Nom.</i> las doctrinas. <i>Gen.</i> de las doctrinas. <i>Dat.</i> para las doctrinas. <i>Acc.</i> a las doctrinas. <i>Abl.</i> de las doctrinas. |
| <i>Sing.</i> | | |

Adiectives are declined like the *Substantives* both singular and plurall number.

Comparatiues and Superlatiues.

The Spanish to make comparison, in the comparatiue degree vseth this participle Mas, as *comparatiues.* Mas diligente, more diligent, Mas vil, more vile: and to diminish, they vse Menos, as Menos diligente, less diligent, Menos vil, less vile.

The Superlatiue.

The Superlatiue is made of this particle Muy, as Muy iusto, very iust: sometime with ex= *Superlatiues.* aggerating and magnifying a matter, they forme their Superlatiues from nounes *Adiectives*, as Iuistrissimo, Humanissimo, Hermosissima, most excellent, most humane, most beautifull.

These following thus compared:

Bueno, mejor, oꝝ mas bueno.
Malo, peor, muy malo.
Grande, mayor, muy grande, oꝝ Grandissimo.
Chico, menor, oꝝ mas chico, muy chico.
Mucho, mas, muy mucho, oꝝ muchissimo.
Poco, menos, muy poco.

There be also *Aduerbs* of qualitie whiche are vsed with Comparatiue and Superlatiue, as nounes whereof they come, as Muy mas elegantamente, much more eloquently, Muy mas discretamente, much more discretely. In like manner, Prepositions, as Detras, behinde, mas Detras, more behinde, muy Detras, much behinde, : Debaxo, beneath oꝝ vnder, mas Debaxo, more below oꝝ vnder, muy Debaxo, much vnder oꝝ beneath.

A Pronoune.

The Spanish Pronoune is as the Latine, like a Noun, and is vsed in rehearsing of a proper name, of Pro and Nomen, i. for the name, and in speech is vsed therefore.

Pronounes are diuided into *Primitiues* and *Deriuatiues*.

The Primitiues are these, yo, tu, si, este, aquellte, el, este, aquél, el qual, que, quien, mismo, to *Primitiues.* which Milmo all before going may be coupled, as yo mismo, I my selfe: tu mismo, thou thy selfe, si mismo, himselfe: el mismo, he himselfe, and so may you say yo misma, tu misma, &c. they are called Primitiues because they are Primi, first, and not derived of others,

Primitiues diuided into *Demonstratiues*.

They are called Demonstratiues because they shew a thing not spoken of before, as yo, tu, *Demonstratiues.* si, aquel, este, el.

Relatiues as repeating oꝝ hauing relation to some thing spoken before, as el, este, que, *Relatiues.* quien, el qual.

Deriuatiues or Possessives, because they be derived of the Primitiues and signifie possession, as belonging to some thing, as mio, oꝝ mi: tuyo, oꝝ tu: suyo, oꝝ su, nuestro, vuestro.

In Pronounes are chiefly to be noted, the Persons, because all Nounes and Particulares

bles be of the third Person, but Pronounes of all three Persons, as yo and his Plurall nos, be of the first Person, Tu and his Plurall vos, of the second : and all the rest whatsoever of the third Person, according to this rule. All Nounes, Pronounes and Participle, be of the third Person, except yo and tu.

The first person Yo, thus declined.

Yo declined.

| | | | |
|-------|------------------|-------------------------------|----------------|
| Sing. | Hom. yo. | Hom. nos, nosotros. | Nosotras. |
| | Gen. de mi. | Gen. de nos, de nosotros. | de nosotras. |
| | Dat. Para mi. | Dat. Para nos, para nosotros. | Para nosotras. |
| | Acc. a mi, a me. | Accus. a nos, a nosotros. | a nosotras. |
| | Abl. de mi. | Abl. de nos, de nosotros. | de nosotras. |

Nota.

This Pronoune in the singular number serueth as well for the Masculine as Feminine gender, so in the Plurall doth Nos. But Nosotras only to the Masculine, and Nosotras to the Feminine.

The Spaniard in speech and writing useth this Pronoune Nos with the first person Plurall of the Imperative mood, by taking away s, from the Verbe, as Vámonos, for Vámos Nos, let vs goe : Dexámonos, for Dexámós Nos, let vs leue.

From this Pronoune Primitiv are two other derived, one from the Singular number, as Mio from yo, another from the Plurall number, as Nuestro from Nosotras.

Mi and Mio.

Mio, Mia, in Latine Meus, mea, meum, in Italian Mio, mia, in French Mon, ma.

Example.

| | Mascul. | Fem. | Mascul. | Fem. |
|-------|-------------------------|-----------|---------------------------|------------|
| Sing. | Hom. Mi, mio. | Mia. | Hom. Mis, mios. | Mias. |
| | Gen. de mi, de mio. | de mia. | Gen. de mis, de mios. | de mias. |
| | Dat. Para mi, para mio, | para mia. | Dat. para mis, para mios. | para mias. |
| | Acc. a mi, a mio. | a mia. | Accu. a mis, a mios. | a mias. |
| | Abl. de mi, de mio. | de mia. | Abl. de mis, de mios. | de mias. |

The learner in the Spanish must note, the manner how the Spaniard useth these Possessives, Mi, mio, Tu, tuyo, Su, suyo : and when he ought to use them in speech or writing, otherwise straight he will bewray himselfe in using unproperly the tongue.

Mi, tu, su, are still used, ioyned with another word, as Mi caballo, my horse, not Mio caballo : Tu piensamento, thy thought, not Tuyo piensamento : Su provecho, his profit, not Suyo Provecho.

But when a question is asked, and Mio, Tuyo, Suyo, put absolutely and not ioyned, as Cuya es esta espada ? whose rapier is this ? Answer : Mio, tuya, suya, mine, thine, his : and not Mi, tu, su : De quien es este cuchillo ? Whose knife is this ? Answer, Mio, tuyo, suyo : and not, Mi, tu, su. In like sort when they make a relation of a thing spoken of before, and are placed at the end of a sentence, clause or period, as éste caballo no es mio, mas de aquél que a mí lo dexó, porque yo fuésser a una casa tuya : this horse is not mine but his that left it me, that I should ride to one of thy houses, and you cannot say, éste caballo es mi, que yo fuésser a una casa tu.

These and many such like I wish the learner in the Spanish to marke diligently in authours as he reads.

S. added maketh Plurall number.

To make the Plural number of Mi, Tu, Su, adde to s, as Mis, Tus, Sus, and so of other words whatsoever, as before of numbers in the Noun.

This other derived from the Plurall Nosotras is thus declined.

| | Mascul. | Fem. | Mascul. | Fem. |
|-------|------------------------------------|-----------|------------------------------------|-----------|
| Sing. | Hom. Nuéstros, | Nuéstras. | Hom. Nuéstros, | Nuéstras. |
| | Gen. de Nuéstros, de Nuéstras. | | Gen. de Nuéstros, de Nuéstras. | |
| | Dat. para Nuéstros, para Nuéstras. | | Dat. para Nuéstros, para Nuéstras. | |
| | Accus. a Nuéstros, a Nuéstras. | | Accus. a Nuéstros, a Nuéstras. | |
| | Ablat. de Nuéstros, de Nuéstras. | | Ablat. de Nuéstros, de Nuéstras. | |

The second person Tu, thus declined.

Second person Tu.

| | | | |
|-------|------------------|---|-----------|
| Sing. | Hom. Tu, | Hom. Vos | Vosotras. |
| | Gen. de Ti, | Gen. de Vos de Vosotras, de Vosotras. | |
| | Dat. para Ti, | Dat. para Vos para Vosotras, para Vosotras. | |
| | Acc. a Ti, a Te, | Accus. a Vos a Vosotras, a Vosotras. | |
| | Abl. de Te, | Ablat. de Vos de Vosotras, de Vosotras. | |

Nota.

Note that the Spaniard most ordinarily ioyneth to the Infinitive mood of any verbe, this particle os, which is as much as vos, as Hablacos, to speake unto you, Véros, to see you, Dizíros, to tell you.

Of Etymologie, and a Pronoune.

17

Of this Primitiue likewise come two Deriuatives, the one of the Singular number, as of Tu comes Tuyo, in Latine *Tuus, tua, tuum*, Italian, *Tuo, Tha*, French *Ton, Ta*. The other of the plurall, Vos, or Vosotros, comes Vuéstro.

Example.

| Mascul. | Fem. | Mascul. | Fem. |
|--------------------------------|-------|----------------------------------|--------|
| Nom. Tu, Tuyo, | Tuya, | Nom. Tus, Tuyos, | Tuyas. |
| Gen. de Tu, de Tuyo, | Tuya, | Gen. de Tus, de Tuyos, | Tuyas. |
| Sing. Dat. para Tu, para Tuyo, | Tuya, | Dat. para Tus, para Tuyos, | Tuyas. |
| Accus. a Tu, a Tuyo, | Tuya, | Accus. a Tus, a Tuyos, | Tuyas. |
| Abl. de Tu, de Tuyo, de Tuya, | | Abl. de Tus, de Tuyos, de Tuyas. | |

But note how the Spaniard and Italian accounteth it a disgrace to speake to any man in the second person singular either in the Nominatiue Tu, or in other cases Ti or Te, except it be to his Meager, his slave, his lackie, horlekeeper, or to some of base & vile account. To their servants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and such like persons they speake in the second person Plurall, as Traédi aqui, bzing hither, &c. Yréys a mi capitro, you shal goe to my shoomaker, Direys que me haga unos borzeguis, and you shall tell him that he make me a paire of buskins.

To all others they vse the third person, as Quiere V.M. andár, Will your Mastership goe? Nota. Ruéga a V.M. que me haga esa merced, &c. I intreat your Mastership that you doe me this courtesie, &c.

And whereas Englishmen say, Von, the French Vons, the Spaniard and the Italian spea- Nota. keth in the third person singular, as V.M.V.S. your Mastership or Worshipp.

The other Deriuative of the plurall number is this, Vuéstro, of Vos or Vosotros, in Latine Nota. Vester, Vestrha, Vestrum, in Italian Vostro, Vostra, French Vostre, in English yours.

Example.

| Mascul. | Fem. | Mascul. | Fem. | Vuéstro. |
|-----------------------------------|----------|-------------------------------|-----------|----------|
| Nom. Vuéstro, Vuéstra, | Vuéstra, | Nom. Vuéstros, Vuéstras. | Vuéstras. | |
| Gen. de Vuéstro, Vuéstra, | Vuéstra, | Gen. de Vuéstros, Vuéstras. | Vuéstras. | |
| Sing. Dat. para Vuéstro, Vuéstra, | Vuéstra, | Dat. para Vuéstros, Vuéstras. | Vuéstras. | |
| Accus. a Vuéstro, Vuéstra, | Vuéstra, | Accus. a Vuéstros, Vuéstras. | Vuéstras. | |
| Ablat. de Vuéstro, Vuéstra, | Vuéstra, | Ablat. de Vuéstros, Vuéstras. | Vuéstras. | |

The third person Si, thus declined.

Si.

*H*om, caret
Sing. and *Gen.* de si. *Si*us, *Sua*, *Suum*: Italian, *Suo, Sua*, French, *Sien, sieanc*; English,
Plurall, Accus. a si, His, as.
Abl. de si.

Example.

| Mascul. | Fem. | Mascul. | Fem. | Su, Súyo. |
|---------------------------------|-------|------------------------------|--------|-----------|
| Nom. su, Súyo, Súya, | Súya, | Nom. sus, Súyos, Súyas. | Súyas. | |
| Gen. de su, Súyo, Súya, | Súya, | Gen. de sus, Súyos, Súyas. | Súyas. | |
| Sing. Dat. para su, Súyo, Súya, | Súya, | Dat. para sus, Súyos, Súyas. | Súyas. | |
| Accus. a su, Súyo, Súya, | Súya, | Accus. a sus, Súyos, Súyas. | Súyas. | |
| Abl. de su, Súyo, Súya, | Súya, | Abl. de sus, Súyos, Súyas. | Súyas. | |

I proceed with the examples of all the Pronounes following by declining them, because as I before said, it is one of the difficultest things in the tongue to haue the true vse of them, and whereby a stranger or the unlearned in his speech or writing, shall fonest discouer himselfe to the naturall or learned in the tongue. Wherefore let not onely the yongue learner, but also the well grounded, and those that are able to discourse and write the tongue well, obserue how and when these Pronounes following (so little differing the one from the other) are to be vsed in their due time and place as followeth:

These too, E'ste and Aquéste, doe signifie unto vs any thing that is nere vs, in that signification as the Latine, *Hic, hoc, hic*: in Italian, *Cotesto, Cotesta, Costoy, Costei, Questo, Questa*: in French, *Cestoy, Ceste oj, Cery*: in English, this here, or this man heare. They doe differ thus,

E'ste and Aquéste, in Latine, *Hic*, is he, or that which is nere or next to me.

E'le, in Latine, *Iste*, he or that, nere or next to thee.

Aquel and El, in Latine, *Illi*, is he, or that which is neither by me nor thee, but a part from vs both.

Nota the difference of these Pronounes following.
E'ste, Aquéste.

Nota.
E'ste, Aquéste.
E'ste.
Aquél, El.

Example.

Of Etymologie and a Pronoune.

Example.

Este.

| | Mascul. | Fem. | Neu. | Mascul. | Fem. |
|--------|-------------|------------|------------|------------------|-------------|
| Sing. | Hom. este, | ésta, | ésto. | Hom. éstos, | éstas. |
| | Gen. déste, | désta | désto. | Gen. déstos, | déstas. |
| Dat. | para este, | para ésta, | para ésto. | Dat. para éstos, | para éstas, |
| Accus. | a este, | a ésta, | a ésto. | Accus. a éstos, | a éstas, |
| Abl. | d' este, | d' ésta, | d' ésto. | Abl. d' estos, | d' éstas. |

In the singular number of this Pronoune, the first words in e, as este, déste, para este, &c. are of the Masculine gender: the second, ésta, désta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as ésto, désto, &c. of the Neuter: but in the Plurall, the first is the Masculine and Neuter: the other the Feminine gender.

Nota.

In the Genitiv case, we say déste, and déstos, casting away the first e, *Euphonie grata*, that it might sound the smoother, yet one may also say, de este, de estos.

Aquíste.
E sc.

Aquíste, Aquista, Aquisto, declined as in the example next above, and so is E'ste, E'sta, E'sto: in Latine, Isle, Ista, Istud: the Italians and French haue no proper words to expresse it, but must use circumlocution: in English, he or that, nere or next to the.

Mismo.

Mismo, Misima, Mismo, declined after the same.

Nota.

Aquel, and El: in Latine, Ille, illa, illud: Italian, Quello, colui, quella, Colei: French, Celuy iceluy, celle, icelle, he or that which is neither nere me nor the, declined both alike.

Note that this El a Pronoune, and El the Article doe differ in declining, specially in the plurall number. This making E'los, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may see. Looke the declining of the Article El, before in the Name.

| | Mascul. | Fem. | Neu. | Mascul. | Fem. |
|-------|-----------|------------|-----------|-----------------|------------|
| Sing. | Hom. el, | ella, | élo. | Hom. élos, | él拉斯. |
| | Gen. del, | d' ella, | d' élo. | Gen. d' élos, | d' él拉斯. |
| Dat. | para el, | para ella, | para élo. | Dat. Para élos, | para él拉斯. |
| Acc. | a el, | a ella, | a élo. | Accu. a élos, | a él拉斯. |
| Abl. | d' el, | d' ella, | d' élo. | Abl. d' élos, | d' él拉斯. |

Nota.

Note that the Spaniard commonly useth this Pronoune Le before a Verbe thus, Le vieno a la memoria, it came to his memorie: Le dixo, he told him: Que del alma le salia, which came from his soule: Dar le lo, to give him that: Le respondió, he answered him.

Nota.

Also the Spaniard useth this Pronoune Le ioyned to the Infinitive moode of a verbe, by changing r of the Infinitive into l, *Euphonie grata*, as Hablárle, to speake unto him, Hablállle: Oyde, to heare him, Oyde: Vérle, to see him, Velle.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latine Quis, Qui, Que, Quod, in Italian, chi, che, il Quale, La Quale, in French, Qui, Lequel, Laquelle, in English, Who, which, thus.

Que, Quien.

| | Hom. | Qué. |
|-------------------|----------------|------|
| Sing. and Plural. | Gen. de Qué. | |
| | Dat. para Qué. | |
| | Accus. a Qué. | |
| | Ablat. de Qué. | |

In this same manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

| | Masc. | Fem. | Neut. | El qual. | fem. |
|--------|----------------|---------------|---------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| Sing. | Hom. el qual, | la qual, | lo qual. | Hom. los quales, | las quales. |
| | Gen. del qual, | de la qual, | de lo qual. | Gen. de los quales, | de las quales. |
| Dat. | para qual, | para la qual, | para lo qual. | Dat. para los quales, | para las quales. |
| Accus. | a qual, | a la qual, | a lo qual. | Accus. a los quales, | a las quales. |
| Ablat. | del qual, | de la qual, | de lo qual. | Ablat. de los quales, | de las quales. |

Verbes.

Of Verbes.

Verbe passiu.

The Spanish tongue hath the same kinde of Verbes, Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons as the Latine. But for the verbe passiu, they make of the verbe Soy, in Latine, Sun, et, fui, and a participle, as Amado, Leydo, Partido, as Soi Amado, Leydo, Partido I am loued, & ad- parted, & with this Accusatiue case or participle Se, with the third person actiu singular or plurall, as Se dice, it is said, Se dízen, they are said, as hereafter in their place more at large shall be declared.

Gerunds.

Also they haue the Gerund in Do in the same manner as the Latines, as Amando, Leyendo, Oyendo,

Oyendo, in Louing, Reading, Hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expresse after another manner. For Gerund in Di the Spaniard useth the Infinitive mode and the preposition De, as De amár, of Louing, De leer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitive mode and the Preposition A, or the Infinitive mode of Soy with a Participle, as Amár, or Ser amado, to be Loued, A oýr or Ser oydo, to be Heard.

And in like manner their Supines, *S*amatum, *S*they *S*A amár.

Supines.

whereas the Latines say, *S*amatu, *S*ay, *S*De ser amado.

And for Participles of the Active voice, *Amans*, El que áma.

Participles.

For Participle of the Passive voice, *Amatus*, Lo que es amado.

For Participle of the Future in Rus, *Amaturus*, El que ha o espéra de amar.

For Participle of the Future in Dus, *Amandus*, Lo que ha de ser amado.

All which by particular examples following shall plainly to the Reader appeare.

Of Coniugations.

The Spanish hath three coniugations onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular,

1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirá, to behold: Hablár, to speake.

2 The second in er, as Perder, to lose: Caér, to fall.

3 The third in yr or ir, as oy'r, to heare: Cumplir, to accomplish.

Tenses.

The first Person Singular of the Indicative mode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Coniugation soever, alwaies endeth in o, Miro, I behoid, Háblo, I speake, Pierdo, I lose: Oygo, I heare.

Indicative Mood.

Preterimperfect of the Indicative, of Verbes Regular, of the second and third Coniugation in ia, or ya, as Perdia, I did lose: Cay'a, I did fail, &c. Oya, I did heare, Complia, I did accomplish, &c. And of the first coniugation all in áva, as Miráva, I did behold: Habláva, I did speake.

First Preterimperfect in y, or i, as oy, perdi, I have heard, I have lost: but of the first Coniugation all in é, as Miré, I have behoden: Hablé, I have spoken.

Second Preterimperfect of all the three Coniugations of al Verbes with this Verbe Hé, and the Participle, as Hé mirado, I have behoden: Hé leydo, I have read: Hé oydo, I have heard.

Preterimperfect thus, avía mirado, leydo, oydo, I had behoden, read, heard.

Future, of the Indicative of all Verbes Regular, and Irregular in ré, as Habláre, I will speake: Leyré, oyré, haré, podré, fabré, Daré.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

| | | | | | |
|--------|--|-----------------------------------|--|---|---|
| Euerie | Imperfect of the Indicative of the second and third Coniugation thus varied; | { ia, ias, ia, iamos, iades, ian, | { y'a, y'as, ya, y'amos, y'ades, y'an, | { Perdia, Perdías, Perdia, Perdiamos, Perdiades, Perdian. | { oy'a, oy'as, oy'a, oy'amos, oy'ades, oy'an, |
| | | | | | |

| | | | | |
|--------|--|------------------------------------|---|--------------------|
| Euerie | Imperfect of the Indicative of the first Coniugation, in áva, ávas, áva : ávamos, ávades, ávan, as Habláva, hablávas, habláva, hablávamos, hablávades, hablávan. | { r'e, rás, ra, rémos, reys, Tran. | { of first, second, sár, hablaré, and third. Con- | { by adding é long |
| | | | | |

| | | | | |
|--------|---|------------------------------------|-------------------|---|
| Euerie | Future of the Indicative of all Verbes of all Coniugations. | { r'e, rás, ra, rémos, reys, Tran. | { and third. Con- | { oy're, oy're, oy're, oy're, oy're, oy're, |
| | | | | |

Of Etymologie, and Verbes.

The Terminations of the Optative and Subiunctive.

| | | | |
|--------|--|-------|---|
| Guerie | Present Tense of the Optative and Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicative Present tense into e, thus, | e, | háble, |
| | | es, | hábles, |
| Guerie | Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the second and third Coniugation, by changing o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus, | a, | perda, |
| | | as, | perdas, |
| Guerie | Preterimper. of the Optative & Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniuga- tion thus, | a, | pérda, |
| | | ámos, | perdámos, |
| Guerie | Preterimperfect of the Optative & Subiunctive of the second & third Coniuga- tion thus, | áys, | perdáys, |
| | | án. | pérdan. |
| | | | hablára, hablaría, hablásse, |
| | | | habláras, hablarías, hablásse, |
| | | | hablára, hablaría, hablásse, |
| | | | habláramos, hablaríamos, hablásemos, |
| | | | hablárides, hablaríades, habláscedes, |
| | | | habláran, hablarían, hablássen. |
| | | | perdiéra, perdería, perdiéssse, |
| | | | perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses, |
| | | | perdiéra, perdería, perdiéssse, |
| | | | perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiéssemos, |
| | | | perdiérides, perderíades, perdiéssedes, |
| | | | perdiéran, perderían, perdiéssen. |

And these Preterimperfect Tenses as all other of what Coniugation soever, of Verbes Regular, and Irregular, forme two voyces of themselves of the second person singular of the first Preterit Tense of the Indicative mode, by taking away Ste, and by making it in the first Coniugation, ára, and ásse, as of this second person of the Preteritperfect of the Indicative singular, Reveláste, commeth the Preterimperfect of the Optative, and Subiunctive Revelára, Revelásse, and of the second and third Coniugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that ste, into éra and ésse, as of this Indicative mod entendiste, commeth the Preterimperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, entendíera, entendíesse, of oyste, commeth oyéra, oyéssse: of diste, diéra, diéssé: of estuviste, estuvíera, estuvíessse: of anduviste, anduvíera, anduvíessse: of pudiste, pudiéra, pudiéssse. And they forme the third voyce of this Preterimperfect by putting to ia, to the Infinitive mood, as of the Infinitive revelar, commeth this Preterimperfect revelaria, of the Infinitive entender, entenderia, of oy'r, oyria, of dár, daria: of estar, estaría, andár, andaría.

| | | | |
|-------|--|---------|--------------|
| Guery | Future of the Optative and Subiunctive of verbes of the first coniugation, thus, | áre, | Habláre. |
| | | áres, | Habláres. |
| Guery | Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus, | áre, | Habláre. |
| | | áremos, | Habláremos. |
| Guery | | áredes, | Habláredes. |
| | | áren. | Habláren. |
| Guery | | ére, | Perdiére. |
| | | éres, | Perdiéres. |
| Guery | | ére, | Perdiére. |
| | | éremos, | Perdiéremos. |
| Guery | | éredes, | Perdiéredes. |
| | | éren. | Perdiéren. |

Now it remaineth to give a Paradigma or example of every Coniugation of their Modes, Numbers and Persons, that the Student in the tongue may forme the rest by, which is the chiefest point of this our Grammar, and without the which the learner shall never be able to write or speake but by aime and rose, and so be discouraged from so laudable a purpose.

Ind

And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the affinitie of these two tonges, as for the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe the Italian, that the understander of both tonges may with one labour (and yet at his ease) see the difference the one from the other, and be hereby able in vnderstanding, writing and speaking, to practise either of them, without vsing the one for the other, or mixng them (a thing often
to the Spaniards nature, as all know who haue travelled in Spaine.) For even as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at diuers times, and in diuers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe : so if you see them bothat one time, and in one place together, and take god heed of them by comparing them, no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discerne, know and call them : Euen so these two languages (sometime altogether so like) being thus laid together, will cause the Reader easilly to discerne and remember them.

Avér and Sér.

And because this Verbe Avér, in Latine Habere, in Italian Hauere, in French Avoir, in English to Haue, and Sér, in Latine Esse, Italian Essere, French Estre, English to Be, doth serue to the coniugating or declining of all other Verbes : They are best in my opinion first to be declined, especially this Verbe Avér, which may fitly be called *Verbum auxiliarium*, a helpfull Verbe, because he doth not only helpe to decline himselfe in his owne preterperfect and preterpluperfect, but doth serue to decline all other Verbes whatsoever in the syne tenues, as by the Examples following you may see. And this Verbe Sér, as before, serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all Verbes Passives, for without it neither the Spanish, Italian, or French, can forme or decline their Passives, as following you may perceiue.

O o

The

AV E R
declined.

The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Avér, in Italian
Hauere, in Latine Habere, in English to Haue.

Indicative mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|-----------------------|---|---|---|
| Pres. | Yo H E, Tu ás, Aque á ož h á. Plural. nosotros Avémos ož Hémos, vosotros Aveys, aquellos án ož hán. | Io Ho & Haggio, Poeticall, tu Hai, colui h á, & hauere, Poeticall. Plural. Noi habbiámo & hauemó, voi hauéte, colóro Hámó. | Ego HABE O, tu Habes, ille Habet, Nos Habemus. vos Habetis. illi Habent. |
| Imperfect. | Avía, Avías, Avia. Piur. Aviamos, Avíades, Avian. | Hauéua & Hauéa, Hauéui, Hauéua & Hauéa. Piur. Hauéuamo & hauéamo, Hauéuáte, Hauéuano & hauéano. | Habebam, habebas, habebat, &c. |
| First preter perfect. | éve, uviste, úvo ož húvo ož óvo, | Hébbi, hauéssi, hébbe. | Habui, Habuissi, &c. |
| | Uvimos, uvistes, (éron. uviéron ož huviéron ož ovi- | Hauémmo, hauéste, hébbero. | |
| Second perfect. | yo He, tu ás, aquél á ož ha. nosotros h émos ož avémos, vosotros aveys, aquellos án ož hán. | Io Ho, tu batí, colui ba, Avido | Habui, habuissi, &c. |
| Pluperfect telle | Avía, avías, avia. Aviamos, avíades, avian. | Hauéua, hauéui, hauéua. Avido | Habuerá, &c. I had had, &c. |
| Futur. | Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avrey's, Avran. | Haueró, hauró & haró, hauerá, hauerá & hará, hauerá, hauerá & hará. Hauerémo, haurémo & harémo, haueréte, haueréte & haréte, haueráno, hauráno & haráno. | Habebo, &c. I shall or will haue, &c. |

Imperative mode.

| | | |
|---|--|------------------|
| áyas tu, | Habbi tu, | Habete, |
| áya aquél, | habbia colui, | habbet, &c. |
| ayámos nosotros, ayays vosotros, áyan aquéllos. | habbiámo noi, habbiáte voi, habbiáno colóro. | Hauethon, &c. |

The Spaniards use in stead of this Imperative mood, this word Ten of Tengo,
I hold: which Tengo is often used of them for this verbe He.

This

This Imperative mode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly vsed for áyas, áya, is thus declined: A V E R
declined.

| | | |
|---|--------------------|------------------------------|
| The Imperative of Tener, | Tén tu, | Hold thou. |
| ordinarily vsed for the Imperat. of A V E R, to haue. | Téngá aquel, | let him Hold. |
| | Tengámus nosótros, | Hold we, or let us Hold. |
| | Tenéd vosótros, | Hold you. |
| | Téngan aquéllos, | Hold they, or let them Hold. |

The Optative mode is vsed with these signes, Oxalá, or else Osi, or Pluguiéssé a Dios: in Latine, *Vtinam*: Is Italian, *O Dio voglia, O che, Dio voleisse che, O Dio che*: French, *Dieu vuelle, Pleust a Dieu*: English, would to God, I pray God, God grant. The Potentiall like the Latine, with these signes, May, Can, Might, Wouid, Should, or ought: both declined like the Subiunctives following: but that the Optative and Potentiall alwayes make their Future tense and Present tense all alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue: so in the future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue hereafter: Oxalá yo Revéle, God grant I reueale: Future tense also, Oxalá yo Revéle, God grant I reueale hereafter: and so of the rest.

Note.

And because the Optative and Potentiall haue their Future tenses all one with their Present: and the Subiunctive hath two Futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|---|---|---|------------------------|---|
| Pres. | áya, áyas, áya. | Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia. | Habeam, Habead, &c. | when I had, when thou hadst, &c. |
| Como | ayámos, ayáys, áyan. | Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano. | Cum | |
| Imperf. | auría, uviéra, aurías, uviéras, uviésses, auría, uviéra, uviéssse. | baueréi, bauería, bauéssi, bauerésti, bauestí, bauéssi, bauerrebbe, bauería, bauéssi. | Cum | haberem, &c. I had, or did haue, &c. |
| Como | auríamos, uviérámos, uviéssemos, auríades, uviérades, uviéssedes, aurían, uviieran, uviéssen. | bauerémmo, bauéssimo, bauereste, bauéssle, bauerébbimo, baueriáno, bauéssero. | Cum | |
| Or decline with H. Huviéra, Huviéssé, or Oviéra, Oviéssé. | | | | |
| Perfec. | áya, áyes, áya, | Hábbia, babbi, hábbia. | Habuerim, &c. | when I haue had, &c. |
| Como | ayámos, ayáys, áyan. | Habbiámo, babbiáte, Hábbiano. | Habuéro. Cum | |
| Pluper. | uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssse. | bauéssi, bauestí, bauéssse. | Habuéro. Cum | habuissim, &c. I had had, &c. |
| Como | uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen. | bauéssimo, bauesté, bauéssero. | Habuéro. Cum | |
| First future. | uviére, uviéres, uviére. | Háueró, bauerái, bauerá. | Habuero, &c. | when I shall haue here after, &c. |
| Como | uviéremos, uviéredes, uviéren. | Haueremo, bauerete, baueranno. | Habuéro. Cum | |

Declining of Verbes.

| | | | |
|----------------------|---|---|---|
| Second Future | auré, aurás, aurá. | baueró, bauerái, bauerá. | bauero. When I shall have hereafter. etc. |
| Future | avido. Quando Como | bauerémo, baueréte, baueránno. | bauero. Cum |

Infinitive mood Present tense

A V E ' R,] Hauere,] Habere.] to have.

Ayer avido,] Hauer baúto,] Habuisse,] to Hane had.

The Future tense.

Espéro de avér, { Eſſer per hauer, } Habitum eſſe,] to have hereafter.

Aviendo,] Havendo,] Habendo,] in Hauing,

Participle

Avido,] Hauuto,] Habitus,] *I* *had*
Participle of the Future tense.

El que espéra de avér,] *Eſſere per hauere,] Habiturus,]* to haue hereafter,

S E R. The other verbum Auxiliarium Sér, with which all Passives are declined: it is in Latine Sum, es, fū: in Italian Essere, to Bē.

Infinitive mood

| Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|-----------------|--------------|-------------|
| Yo SO'Y, | Io SONO, | Sum, |
| tu éres, | tu sei, | es, |
| aqué'l és. | colui è. | est. |
| Present. | Plu. | Plu. |
| nosotros Sómos, | No siamo, | Sumus, |
| vosotros sóis, | voi siete, | esis, |
| aqué'llos són. | coloro sóno. | sunt. |

| | | | |
|---|---|--------------------|----------|
| Imperf. éra, éras, éra. éramos, érades, éran- | éra, éri, éya. erámo, et eranámo, eranáte, éranzo. | eram, eras, &c. | 388, §8. |
|---|---|--------------------|----------|

| | | | | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|--|-----------|------------------|
| | Fúy, fúiste, Fúe, | Fui, fúisti, fú. | Fui, fúe. | I have been, ss. |
| First Preter- perfect. | Fúimos, fúistes, fúeron. | Fúmo, fúste, fúrono, fúron, et fúro. | | |

| | | | | | | |
|--|--|-------|-----------------------------------|--------|-----------------------|------------------|
| Second Preter- perfect. | <i>He, oꝝ úve, ás, oꝝ uvíste, á, oꝝ úvo.</i> | Sido. | <i>Sómo, sti, e.</i> | State. | <i>Fui, oꝝ. .</i> | I have been, &c. |
| | <i>Avémos, oꝝ uvímos, auéys, oꝝ uvístes, ás, oꝝ uvíeron,</i> | | <i>Siámo, sete, jóno,</i> | | <i>Stati.</i> | |

| | | |
|---|--|--|
| Pluperf. Avía, auías, avía. Avíamos, aviades, avían. | Sido. éra, éri, éra, eranámo, erauáte, eráno. | Stato. Fueram, &c. I habdeñe, &c. |
|---|--|--|

Declining of Verbes.

25

| | | | | |
|--------|---|---|---------------------|----------------------------|
| future | Seré, serás, será. Serémos, seréys, serán. | Saró, & sia, sarái, sará & sia. Sarémo, saréte, saránmo. | Ero, &c. | I shall or will be. |
| | | | | |

Imperative mode.

| | | | |
|--|---|--|--|
| Sé tu, o^r seytu, sea aquél, Seámos nosótros, séd vosótros, seán aquéllos. | Sij, sia, & sietu, sia, & sietui, Siámo noi, siate voi, stano coloro. | Sia, es, esto, sit, esto, Simus, sistis, estote, sint, suntos. | Be thou, Be he or let him be, &c. |
| | | | |

Subjunctive mode.

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|------------|---|
| Spanish. Pret. Como | yo S E' A, tu séas, aquél sea, seámos, seáys, seán. | Italian. Quando | Cum | Latine. when I am, &c. |
| | | Io S I A, tu sif, sia, colui sia, sie, siamo, siate, siaon, & sieno. | | |
| Imper. fect. Como | fuéra, sería, fuésse, fuéras, serías, fuésses, fuéra, sería, fuésses, fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssenios, fuérades, seríades, fuéssedes, fuéran, serían, fuéssen. | Quando | Cum | when I was. |
| | | sarei, fóssi, fússi, sarebti, fóssi, fússi, sarebbe, fósse, fússe, saremmo, fóssimo, fússimo, sareste, fóste, fúste, (fússero sarebbono, sareano, fóssero, | | |
| Preter. perfect. Como | áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan, | Quando | Cum | when I have voene, &c. |
| | | sia, si, sia, siámo, siáte, siaon, | | |
| Pluper. fect. Como | uviéra o^r uviéisse, uviéras o ^r uviésses, uviéra o ^r uviésse, uviéramos, o^r uviéssemos, uviérades, o ^r uviéssedes, uviéran o ^r uviéssen, | Quando | Cum | when I hav e, &c. |
| | | fósse, sarei, fóssi, sarebti, fósse, sarebbe, fóssimo, saremmo, fósse, sarete, fóssero, sarebbono, | | |
| first Futur. Como | fuére, fuéres, fuére, fuéremos, fuéredes, fuéren, | Quando | Cum | when I shall be, &c. |
| | | saró, sarái, sará, sarémo, sarete, saránno, | | |

| | | | | | | |
|------------------|------------------------------|-------|------------------------------|--------|------------|-------------------------|
| second Futur. | avré avrás, avrá, | Sido. | avró, avrás, avrá, | stato. | fiero, &c. | When I shall be, &c. |
| Como | avrémós avréys, avrán, | | avrémó, avréys, avrán, | | stati. | |

Infinitive mode, Present Tense.

| | | | |
|---------------------|-------------------------------|---------------------------|---|
| S E R ,] | E f f e r e ,] | E s s e ,] | To be. |
| A V E R s i d o ,] | E f f e r s t a t o ,] | I s s u f f e ,] | Prieterperfect and Puperfect, To haue beene. |
| A u é r | { d o u e r e f f e r e , | { s f o r e , | Future Tense. |
| de fér, | { b a u e r a d e f f e r e , | { f u t u r u m e f f e , | { after. Gerund. |
| S i é n d o ,] | E f f e n d o ,] | The Latine wants,] | In being. |
| S I D O] | s t a t o ,] | | Participle. |

I. Coniug.
of Regular
Verbes in
AR, RE-
VELAR

An Example of the first Coniugation of Verbes Regular in
AR, as Revelár] in Italian Riveláre] Latine Reveláre]
in English to Reveale or discouer, as Revelár,
in Spanish is also as Rebelár, to rebell.

Indicative mode

| | Spanish. | Italan. | Latine. | |
|-----------------|--|--|-------------------------------------|--|
| Pref. | yo R E V E ' L O , tu Revélas, aquelrevéla, revelámós, reveláys, revélan. | I O R I V E ' L O , t u r i v e l í , c o l ú r e v é l a , r i v e l á m ó , r i v e l á y s , r i v e l á n o . | Reuelo, reuelas, reuelat, &c. | I reueale, Thou reueas lest, &c. |
| Imper- fect. | reveláva, revelávas, reveláva, revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan, | r i v e l á u a , r i v e l á u i , r i v e l á u a , r i v e l á u a m o s , r i v e l á u a t e , r i v e l á u a n o , | reuelatum, &c. | I did reueale. |
| First Perf. | revelé, reveláste, reveló, revelámós, revelástes, reveláron, | r i v e l á i , r i v e l á s t i , r i v e l ó , r i v e l á m m o , r i v e l á s t e , r i v e l á r e n o , r i v e l á r o n , r i v e l á r o , r i v e l á r . | reuelani, &c. | I haue reueas led, &c. |

Second

Declining of Verbes.

27

| | | | | | | | | | |
|-----------------|---|------------|--|-----------|--------------------|------------------------------|--|--|--|
| Second perfect. | hé, ož vive, ás, ož uviste, á, ož vivo, | >revelado. | { bo, bái, há, | >riuelato | { reuelani, &c. | I have reuealed, &c. | | | |
| | | | | | | led, &c. | | | |
| Plu= perfect. | avémos, ož uvímos avéys, ož uvistes, án, ož uviéron, | | { babbiamo, babbiáte, hanno, | | { reuelaueram, &c. | I had reuealed, &c. | | | |
| | | | | | | led, &c., | | | |
| futur. | avía, avias, avia, avíamos, aviades, avían, | >revelado. | { hauéua, hauéui, hauéua, hauéuamo, hauemate, hauehano, | >riuelato | { reuelabo, &c. | I shall or will reueale, &c. | | | |
| | | | | | | reueale, &c. | | | |
| | revelaré, revelarás, revelará, revelarémos, revelaréys, revelaráñ, | | { riuelaró, riuelarai, reuelará, riuelanémo, riuelaréte, riuelaránno, | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | |

Oftentimes for the Future of this Indicative Mode, as well of this first Conjugation, as of all the rest, is used the Infinitive Mode, and the Present tense of the Verbe Avér, with a Particle going betwene them, as Revelár lo hé, Revelár lo hás, Revelár lo á. And so of the other Conjugations, as Entender lo hé, Entendér lo ás, oy' lo hé, oyr lo hás, &c.

Not a.

Imperative mode.

| | | | |
|---------------------|------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|
| revéla tu, | riuelá tu, | reuela, reuelato | Reueale thou, |
| | | | |
| revéle aquel, | riueli colui, | reuelet, reuelato | be thou reuealed, &c. |
| | | | |
| Plu. | riuelamo noi, | reuelamus, | Reueale we, |
| | | | |
| revelémos nosótros, | riuelate voi, | reuelatis, | Reueale you, |
| | | | |
| reuelád vosótros, | riuelino coloro, | reuelent. | Reueale they, |
| | | | |
| revélan aquéllos, | | | |

Subjunctive mode with signes, Si, Como, ož other Conjunction.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | | |
|--------|--|---|----------|----------------|--------------|
| Pref. | Yo Revéle, | Io Riueli, | | Reuelam, &c. | When I doe |
| | tu Revéles, | tu Riueli, | | | Reueale, &c. |
| Como | aquel Revéle. | colui Riueli. | | | |
| | Plurall. | Quando | Plurall. | Cum | |
| Imper. | Revelémos, | Riueliamó, | | Reuelarem, &c. | When I did |
| | Reveléys, | Riueliáte, | | | Reueale, &c. |
| Como | Revélen. | Riuelino. | | | |
| | Revelára, revelaría, reveláffe, | Riuelassi, riuelaréi, riuelaria, | | | |
| Imper. | Reveláras, revelarias, reveláffes, | Riuelasti, riuelaresti, | | | |
| | Revelára, revelaría, reveláffe, | Riuelasse, riuelarebbe, riuelaria | | | |
| Como | Quando | Riuelássimo, riuelarémmo, | | Cum | |
| | Reveláramos, revelariamos, reveláffemos | Riuelastis, riuelarestis, | | | |
| | Revelárades, revelariades, reveláffedes, | Riuelasse, riuelareste, | | | |
| | Reveláran, revelarian, reveláffen. | Riuelassero, riuelarebbono, riuelariano | | | |
| | | | | | Perfer. |

Declining of Verbes.

| | | | | | | | |
|--------------------------|--|-----------------------|--------------|---|---------------------|--|-------------------------------|
| perfect Como | { áyo, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, | Revelado. | Quando | { Hábbi, Hábbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiano, Quando | Ruelato. Cum | Reuelauerim, etc. | when I haue reuealed, etc. |
| | | | | | | | |
| plus perfect Como | { uviéra oz uviéffe, uviéras oz uviéffes, uviéra oz uviéfle, uviéramos oz uviéffemos, uviérades oz uviéffedes, uviéran oz uviéffen, | Revelado. | Quando | { Hauéffi, bauéffi, bauéffe, bauéffim, bauéffe, bauéffero, | Ruelato. Cum | Reuelassem, etc. | when I had reuealed, etc. |
| | | | | | | | |
| First future Como | { Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Revelatémos, Reveláredes, Reveláren, | Quando | Ruelato. Cum | { Haueró, bauerái, bauera, bauerímo. bauerete, baueránno, | Reuelauero, etc. | when I shall oz will Re- ueale, etc. | |
| | | | | | | | |
| Second future Como | { uviére oz avré, uviéres oz avrés, uviére oz avrá, uviéremos oz avrémos, uviéredes oz avréys, uviéren oz avrán, | Reve- lado. Quando | Ruelato. Cum | { Haueró, bauerái, baueryá, bauerímo, bauerete, baueránno, | Reuelauero, etc. | when I shall oz will Re- ueale, etc. | |
| | | | | | | | |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Revelár,] Ruelare,] Reuelare,] to Reneale or discover;
Preterperfect tense.

Aver Revelado,] Hauerruelato,] Reuelauisse,] to haue reuealed.
The Future tense.

Avér o Esperár { Deuer Ruelare, Eſſere per { to Reneale
de Revelár, { Ruelare, Hauer a Ruelare, { hereafter.
Gerund.

Revelando,] Ruelando,] Reuelando,] in Renealing.
Supine of the Actiu signification.

a Revelár,] Ruelatam] Reuelatum] to be absut to Reneale.
Supine of the Passiu signification.

De ser Revelado] D'effere Ruelato] Reuelitu] to be Renealed.
Participle of the Present tense and Actiu voice.

El que Revéla,] Ruelante,] Reuelans] Renealing.
Participle of the Preter tense and Passiu voice.

Revelado,] Ruelato,] Reuelatus,] Renealed.

All verbs which haue their Infinitives in AR, are declined in all points like this here
declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

An

An Example of the second Coniugation of verbes

Regular in E R, as Entendér, in Italian Intendere,

Latine Intelligere, to Understand.

2. Coning.
of Regular
verbs in er
Entendér.

Indicatiue mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|----------------------|---|--|---|---|
| Pres. | yo ENTIE'NDO, tu Entiéndes, aquel Entiende. Plurall. Entendémos, Entendéys, Entienden. | Io Intendo tu Inténdi, colui Inténde. Plu. Intendiamò, Intendete, Intendino. | Intelligo, &c. Plu. Intelligebam, &c. Intelligebam, &c. | I do Under- stand, &c. I DID Under- stand, &c. |
| Imper. fect. | Entendía, Entendías, Entendía, Entendíamos, Entendiades, Entendían, | Intendéua & Intendéa, Intendéui, Intendéua & Intendéa, Intendeuámó, Intendeuáte, Intendeuáno. | Intelligebam, &c. Intelligebam, &c. | I DID Under- stand, &c. |
| First perfect. | Entendí, Entendíste, Entendió, Entendímos, Entendístes, Entendieron. | Intéfì, Intendífti, Intéfè, Intendémmo, Intendéfte, Intefero. | Intellexi, &c. | I have Un- derstood, &c. |
| Secōd perfect. | He oꝝ uvé, ás oꝝ uvíste, á oꝝ uvo. hémox oꝝ uvímos, aveýs oꝝ uvistes án oꝝ uviéron, | Ho bái ba habbiámó hauéte báno | Intéfò. Intellexi, &c. | I have Un- derstood, &c. |
| pluper- fect tēse | Avía, avías, avía. Avíamos, avíades, avian, | hauéua hauéui hauéna hauéámó hauéáte hauéano | Intéfò. Intellexeram, &c. | I had Un- derstood, &c. |
| Futur. | Entenderé, Entenderás, Entenderá. Entenderémos, Entenderéys, Entenderán, | Intenderó, Intenderái, Intenderá, Intenderémo, Intenderéte, Intenderánno. | Intelligam, &c. | I shall oꝝ wü Understand. |

Imperatiue mode.

| | | | |
|--|---|---|---|
| Entiende tu, Entiende aquel. Entendámos nosótros, Entendéd vosótros, Entiéndan aquellos. | Intendi tu. Intenda colui, Intendiamò noi, Intendete voi, Inténdano coloro. | Intellige, Intelligito, Intelligat, Intelligito. | Understand thou, Understand he oꝝ let him understand. |
|--|---|---|---|

Second

Entender. Second Conjugation of Regular Verbes in ER, as ENTENDER.
Subjunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|-------------------|--|--|---|
| Pres. | {yo ENTÉNDA, tu entiéndas, aquel entiérda, Plu. entendámos, entendáys, entiéndan. | yo INTENDA, tu inténdi, colui intenda, intendiámō, intendiáte, inténdano, | intel- ligam &c. Cum intendēss̄o, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄e, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄e, intendēmō, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄ero, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, |
| Imper. fect. | {entendíera, entendería, entendíess̄e, entendíeras, entenderías, entendíess̄es, entendíera, entendería, entendíess̄es, entendíeramos, entenderíamos, entendíess̄emos, entendíeras, entenderías, entendíess̄edes, entendíerán, entenderían, entendíess̄en. | intenderei, intendereis, intendēss̄o, intendereis, intendereis, intendēss̄o, intenderebbe, intendereis, intendēss̄e, intendēremo, intendēreis, intendēss̄o, intendērebb̄o, intendēreis, intendēss̄o, | Cum intendēss̄o, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄e, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄e, intendēmō, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄ero, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, |
| Perf. | {áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan. | {habbia, habbi, habbia, habbiámō, habbiate, habbianno, | intel- lex- em, &c. Cum intendēss̄o, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄e, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, intendēmō, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄ero, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, |
| Plus- perfect. | {uviéra, ož uviéss̄e, uviéras, ož uviéss̄es, uviéra, ož uviéss̄e, uviéramos, ož uviéss̄emos, uviérades, ož uviéss̄edes, uviéran, ož uviéss̄en, | {baueréi, & bauéss̄i, hauerésti, & bauéss̄i, haueréb̄e, & bauéss̄e, hauerémō, & bauéss̄imo, haueréste, & bauéss̄e, haueréb̄ero, & bauéss̄ero, | intel- lexif- sem, &c. Cum intendēss̄o, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄e, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, intendēmō, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄ero, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, |
| First future. | {Entendière, entendieres, entendière, entendíremos, entendíredes, entendíren. | {baueréi, & bauéss̄i, bauerái, & bauéss̄i, bauerá, & bauéss̄i, bauerémō, & bauéss̄imo, baueréte, & bauéss̄e, baueráno, & bauéss̄o, | intel- lexero &c. Cum intendēss̄o, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄e, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, intendēmō, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄ero, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, |
| Second future. | {uviére, ož auré, uviéres, ož aurás, uviére, ož aurá, uviéremos, ož aurémos, uviéredes, ož auréys, uviéren, ož aurán, | {baueréi, & bauéss̄i, bauerái, & bauéss̄i, bauerá, & bauéss̄i, bauerémō, & bauéss̄imo, baueréte, & bauéss̄e, baueráno, & bauéss̄o, | intel- lexero &c. Cum intendēss̄o, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄e, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, intendēmō, intendēst̄o, intendēb̄ero, intendēt̄o, intendēss̄o, |

Infinitive mod Present Tense.

Entender,] Intendere,] Intelligere] To understand.

Pretterperfect Tense.

auér entendido,] bauer inteso,] intellexisse,] To haue understood.

The Future Tense.

aver o Esperár de entendér,] bauer ad intendere,] intellegitum,] to understand
d' esser per intendere,] Effer per intendere,] hereafter.

Gerund

entendiéndo,] intendendo,] intelligendo] In understanding.

Supines of the active voice.

a enténdér,] ad intendere] intellectum] To understand.

Supine of the passive voice.

de sér entendido,] d' essere inteso,] intellectu] To be understood.

Participle

Declining of Verbes.

31

el que entiendo,] Participle of the actine voice and present Tense.
 [intendente] intelligens,] Understanding.
 entendido,] Participle of the Preter tense and passive voice.
 [inteso] intellectus] Understood.
 All Verbes whose Infinitives end in er, are in all points declined like this, except the irregular in er following.

An Example of the third and last Coniugation of Regular verbs 3. and last
 in Ir or Yr, as ABR IR, in Italian Aprire, Latine Aperire, to
 Open, Oyr, Italian Vdire, Latine Audire, to Heare.

coniugation
 of Verbes
 Regular in

Ir, or Yr.

Indicative moode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | I doe heare, &c. |
|---------------------------|---|---|--|-------------------------------|
| Pref. | O'YO, y O'Y'GO, éyes, óye. | O DO, odi, ode. | Audio, &c. | I doe heare, &c. |
| | Plur. | Plur. | | |
| | oymos, oys, oyen. | vdiamo, vdite, ódomo. | | |
| Imper- fet. | Oya, oyas, oya. | Vdiaua, vdíui, vdíua. | Audiebam, &c. | I did heare, &c. |
| | oyamos, oyades, oyan. | vdinámo, vdinuate, vdinano. | | |
| First Perf. | Oy, oyste, oyó. | Vdi & vdi, vdi, vdísi, vdi. | Audiu, &c. | I haue heard, &c. |
| | oymos, oytes, oyron. | vdimmo, vdíste, (ro, vdír. vdírono, vdiron, vdi- | | |
| Second Perfect. | He, ož tive, ás, ož uviste, á, ož úvo. | Ha, hai, ba, | Audiui, &c. | I haue heard, &c. |
| | ávemos, ož uvímos, avéys, ož uvístes, án, ož uvíron, | habbiámo, baueto, hanno. | Vdito. | |
| Pluper- fet. | avía, avías, avía, aviamos, aviades, avian. | bauiuia, baueni, bauéua, bauemamo, bauenáte, bauéuano, | Audiueram, &c. | I had heard. |
| | oyré, oyras, oyrá, oyrémos, oyréys, oyrán, | vdírō, vdírāi, vdírá, vdírimo, vdírete, vdírimo, | Vdito. | |
| future. | Oy' tu, oy'ga, ož óya aquél, oy'amos nosotros, oy'd vosotros, oy'an, ož óyan aquello, | odi tu, óda colui, vdiamo noi, vdíte voi, ódano colóro, | Audiam, &c. | I shall ož will heare, &c. |
| Impe- rativue mode. | Oy' tu, oy'ga, ož óya aquél, oy'amos nosotros, oy'd vosotros, oy'an, ož óyan aquello, | audi, audito, audiat, audito, &c. | Hearc thou, Hearc he ož let him heare, &c. | |

The

OYR
declined.

The Third and last Coniugation of verbes Regular in IR, and YR.

Subiunctive mode

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|--------------------------|--|--|--|
| Pres. Como | O'Y A, o ^r óyga, óyas, o ^r óygas, óya, o ^r óyga, oyámos, o ^r oygámos, oyáys, o ^r oygáys, óyan, o ^r óygan. | O'D A, ódi, óda. Quando oyámos, o ^r oygámos, oyáys, o ^r oygáys, óyan, o ^r óygan. | Cum Audiam, &c. When I heare. |
| Imper. fect. Como | Oyéra, oyería, oyéffe, oyéras, oyeras, oyéffes, oyéra, oyería, oyéffe. oyéramos, oyriámos, oyéllemos, oyérades, oyriádes, oyéffedes, oyéran, oyrián, oyéffen. | V'dissi, vdiréi, vdería, v'dissi, vdiréssi, v'dissi, vdirébbe, vdiría. Quando oyéramos, oyriámos, oyéllemos, oyérades, oyriádes, oyéffedes, oyéran, oyrián, oyéffen. | Cum Audirem, &c. When I did heare, &c. |
| Perf. fect. Como | A'ya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, | Hábbia, habbi. habbia. babbiámó, babbiáte, babbiáno. | Cum Audine- rim, &c. When I have heard, &c. |
| pluspe. Como | Uviéra, o ^r uviéffe, uviéras, o ^r uviéffes, uviéra, o ^r uviéffe, uviéramos, o ^r uviéssimos, uviérades, o ^r uviéffedes, uviéran, o ^r uviéffen, | Soy'do. Hauéss, haueréi, bauería, hauéss, haueréssi, hauéss, hauerébbe, bauría, baueffimo, hauerémo. baueste, hauereste, baueffero, bauerébbono, bauriano. | Cum v'dis. Audíssim, &c. when I had heard, &c. |
| First Futur. Como | Oyére, oyéres, oyére, oyéremos, oyéredes, oyéren. | Cum Audiuero, &c. when I shall heare, &c. | |
| Second Future Como | Uviére, o ^r auré, uviéres, o ^r aurás, uviére, o ^r aurá, uviéremos, o ^r aurémos, uviéredes, o ^r auréys, uviéren, o ^r aurán, | Soy'do. Quando Haueró, hauerái, bauerá, haueró, haueréte, baueráno, bauerémo, baueréte, baueráno, | Cum Audiuero, &c. when I shall heare. |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

| | | | |
|--------------|--|-----------------|---------------------|
| O Y'R,] | V'dire,] | Audire,] | to Heare. |
| avér Oydo | bauer V'dito,] | Audiuisse,] | to haue Heard. |
| avér de Oyr, | douer V'dire, bauer ad V'dire, effer per V'dire. | Auditum esse,] | to Heare hereafter. |

Gerund

Declining of Verbes Passives.

33

Termed.

| | | | | |
|-----------------|-------------------|-------------|--------------|-----------------|
| Oyéndo,] | Oyéndo,] | Audiendo,] | in Hearing, | che oyéndo |
| a Oyr,] | Vaire,] | Audium,] | to Hearer. | cubit oyéndo |
| de ser Oy'do,] | d'essere Vdito,] | Audit,] | to be Heard. | cubit oyéndo |
| el que Oye,] | chi Ode,] | Audient,] | Hearing. | cubit oyéndo |
| Oy'do,] | Vdito,] | Auditus,] | Heard. | cubit oyéndo |

All verbes whose Infinitives end in ir, ozyr, are declined in every respect like this: except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

Of Verbes Passives.

The Spaniards, as the Italian and French, decline their Verbes passives with their Verbe *Sum, es, fu, i*, and the Participle of the Preter tense, as of *Revelár*, to reveale: soy revelado, I am revealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passive of the first and third Conjugation of their Infinitive mood, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of *Revelár*, *Revelado*, *Pedir*, to require, *Pedido*, required, *Oyr*, to heare, *Oydo*, heard.

But in the second Conjugation they take away r as before, and change the last e into y or i, and adde to do as aforesaid, as *Leer*, to read, *Leydo*: *Entender*, to understand, *Entendido*.

A Verbe Passive thus declined.

Indicative mood.

| Spanish. | | Italian. | Latin. | |
|---|-----------------------------------|---|------------------------------|--|
| YO SO YO, | | IO SO'NO, | Renelor, Renelari, &c. | I am Beneas led. |
| tu éres, aquel ést, | Revelado. | tuséi, coluié, | Rivelato. | thou art Re vealed. |
| Plu. | | Plu. | | |
| Sómos, sóys, són, | Revelados. | Siámo, sete, sono, | Rivelati. | |
| | | | | |
| E'ra, eras, éra, | Revelado. | E'ra, eri, éra, | Rivelato. | Reuelabar, Reuelabaris, &c. |
| Im= perfect. | | | | |
| éramos, érades, éran, | Revelados. | erámo, & erámu, eráte, eráno, | Rivelati. | I was Re vealed, thou wast Revealed, &c. |
| | | | | |
| Fuí, fueste, fue, | Revelado. | Fui, föli, fü, | Rivelato. | Reuelatus sum vel fui, &c. |
| First Perf. | | | | |
| fuymos, fuites, fueron, | Revelados. | fímo, föfie, füron, füro, füron | Rivelati. | I have been Revealed, &c. |
| | | | | |
| HE, oj úve as, oj uvíse a, oj úvo | Sido Re Sido velá- Sido do. | Sono State, sei State, é State, | Rivelato. | Reuelatus sum vel fui, idem ut antea, &c. |
| Second perfect. | | | | |
| Hémios, oj uvímos Sido, Re avéis, oj uvístes Sido, velá- an, oj uvíron, Sido dos. | | Siamo Stati, sete Stati, son Stati, | Rivelati. | I have been Revealed, &c. |
| | | | | |

P P

Pluperfeg.

| | | | | | | | | | | | |
|------------------------|----------------------------------|-------|-------------------|------------------------------|--------|-------------|---|--|--|--|--|
| Plus perfect. | Avia | Sido, | { Revelado. | E'ra | Stato, | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus eram vel fu- eram, &c. | I had bee- nealed, &c. | | | |
| | avias | Sido, | | eri | Stato, | | | | | | |
| | avia | Sido, | | era | Stato, | | | | | | |
| future. | aviamos | Sido, | { Revelados. | eravimo | Stati, | { Rivelati. | { Rivelatus eravate Stati, | | | | |
| | aviades | Sido, | | eravate | Stati, | | | | | | |
| | avian | Sido, | | eravano | Stati, | | | | | | |
| future. | Seré, | | { Revelado. | Saró, | | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus serás, | I shall or will be Rivelated. | | | |
| | será, | | | sarai, | | | | | | | |
| | Seremos, | | | sarai, | | | | | | | |
| future. | seréis, | | { Revelados. | Sarímo, | | { Rivelati. | { Rivelatus serán, | | | | |
| | seréte, | | | saríte, | | | | | | | |
| | seránno, | | | saríanno, | | | | | | | |
| Imperative mōd. | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Im- perf. Como | Sé tu, | | { Revelado. | Sia, & si tu, | | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus sea aquil, | be thou Re- vealed, | | | |
| | Seámos, | | | sia, & sicollas, | | | | let him be Re- vealed, &c. | | | |
| | icd, | | | síamo, | | | | | | | |
| Im- perf. Como | Séan, | | | síate, | | | | | | | |
| | | | | síano, | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Subjunctive mōd. | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Spanish. | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Pres. Como | yo Séa | | { Revelado. | Io Sia | | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus tu séas | Latine. | | | |
| | aquel séa | | | tusij, sia | | | | Reuelar, &c. | | | |
| | | | | voluisia, sie | | | | When I am Reuealed, &c. | | | |
| Im- perf. Como | Scámos | | { Revelados. | Quando | | { Cum | { Cum | | | | |
| | scáys | | | siámo | | | | | | | |
| | scán | | | síate | | | | | | | |
| Im- perf. Como | Fuéra, sería, fuésse | | { Reve- lado. | Fossi, fussi, sarei, saria | | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus fuéras, serías, fuésses | Reuelar, &c. | | | |
| | fuéra, sería, fuésse | | | fossi, fussi, saresti, saria | | | | When I was Benealed, &c. | | | |
| | | | | fossi, fussi, sarebbe, saria | | | | | | | |
| Im- perf. Como | Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssemos | | { Reve- lados. | Quando | | { Cum | { Cum | | | | |
| | fuérades, seríades, fuéssedes | | | fossimo, füssimo, saremimo | | | | | | | |
| | fuéran, serian, fuéßen | | | foste, fuisse, sareste, | | | | | | | |
| Perf. Como | A'ya | Sido | { Revelado. | fossero, füssero, sarebbono | | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus áyas | Reuelatus sim vel fue- rim, &c. | | | |
| | ayáy | Sido | | síamo | stato | | | When I have beeenealed, &c. | | | |
| | áya | Sido | | síate | stati | | | | | | |
| Perf. Como | ayámos, Sido | | { Revelados. | Quando | | { Cum | { Cum | | | | |
| | ayáys | Sido | | siámo | stati | | | | | | |
| | ayan | Sido | | síano | stati | | | | | | |
| Plur. perf. Como | Uviére o2 uviésse | | { Reve- lado. | Sido | Re- | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus uviéras o2 uviésses | Reuelatus essim vel fu- issim, &c. | | | |
| | uviéra o2 uviésse | | | Sido | velá- | | | When I had beeenealed. | | | |
| | | | | Sido | do. | | | | | | |
| Plur. perf. Como | uviéramos, o2 uviéssemos | | { Reve- lados. | Quando | | { Cum | { Cum | | | | |
| | uviérades, o2 uviéssedes | | | sido | Re- | | | | | | |
| | uviéran, o2 uviéssen | | | Sido | velá- | | | | | | |
| future. Como | Fuére o2 uviére o2 avré | | { Reve- lado. | sido | Re- | { Rivelato. | { Rivelatus fuéres o2 uviéres o2 avras | Reuelatus ero vel fue- ro, &c. | | | |
| | fuére o2 uviéres o2 avra | | | sido | ládo. | | | | | | |
| | | | | sido | sarai | | | | | | |
| future. Como | fuéremos o2 uviéremos o2 avrémos | | { Reve- lados. | Quando | | { Cum | { Cum | | | | |
| | fuéredes o2 uviéredes o2 avréys | | | sido | Re- | | | | | | |
| | fuéren o2 uviéren o2 avrán | | | Sido | ládos. | | | | | | |
| future. Como | | | | sido | sarai | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Ser Revelado,] *Ruelarſi, effere Ruelato,*] *Ruelari,*] to be Revealed.

Preter tense.

Avér Sido Revelado,] *Effere fato Ruelato,*] *Ruelatum effe vel fuisse,*] to have been Revealed.

Future tense.

Avér de sér Dower effere Ruelato,] *Ruelatum iri vel*] to be Revealed
Ruelado,] *bauer ad effere Ruelato,*] *Ruelandum effe,*] hereafter.

Participle of the Present tense.

Lo que es Revelado,] *Ruelatio,*] *Ruelatus,*] that which is Revealed.

Participle of the future tense.

Lo que ha de ser Hauendo ad effere Ruelato,] *Rue-
Revelado,*] *bauendo a Ruelarsi,*] *Ruelandus,*] hereafter.

After this manner in every respect all other verbes Passives, Regular or Irregular of what Conjugation soever, are to be declined as of the second Conjugation, Soy Vendido, Polseydo, Defendido, and of the third Conjugation, as Soy Oy'do, Corregido, Seguido, and so of the rest.

Note that this accusative case Sc of the Pronoun is joined with the third Person of verbes Actives, make them have the Passive signification, as Dize he saith, Se dize; it is said.

Nota.

Now will I handle and intreat of the verbes Irregular (in which is found hardness and difficultie to the learner for their declining) in such order and manner that he may with his ease or very little paine decline any of them whatsover: for which purpose and for whose ease and profit, I have to my great labour brought them into the forme as followeth, and haue so diligently searched, that no one of them needfull to his use (as I hope) shall be wanting, nor here following set downe, that my labours may be answerable to my desire, and the learners profit to my paines.

Nota.

The first Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in A R, as D A R, in Italian and Latine Dare, to Give.

I. Conjug.
of Verbes
Irregular
in A R.

Nota.

The verbes Irregular like as the Regular diuided into three Conjugations, the first in ar, the second in er, the third in ir or yr.

The verbes Irregular differ from the Regular above going in the first Preterperfect of the Indicative, and Preterimperfect of the Subjunctive, as by the examples following you may see.

Indicative mod.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|-------------------|---|--|-------------------------|----------------------|
| Pres. | yo D O Y, tu Dás, aquel Da. Plur. Dámos, Dáys, Dan. | Io DO, tu Dái, colui Da. Plur. Diamo o; Dámoo, Date, Dámo. | Do, Das, Dat, &c. | I doe give, &c. |
| Imperf. | Dáva, Dávas, Dáva. Dávamos, Dávades, Dávan. | Dáva, Dávai, Dávaa. Dávamo, Dávade, Dávano. | Dabam, &c. | I did give, &c. |
| First Perfect. | Dí, Diste, Dió. Dímos, Dístes, Díeron. | Diedi & Dei, Déſi. Diede & Dette, Démamo, Déstes Dídero. | Dedi, &c. | I have Given, &c. |
| | | | | Second |

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

| | | | | | | |
|-----------------|---|-------|--|-------|------------------------------|---|
| second perfect. | yo He tu ás aquel á hemos avey's án | Dádo. | Ho hai ha habbiamo hauete hanno | Dato. | Dedi, &c. vt supra. | I have Gi- uen, &c as next above. |
| Plus per. | Avía, Avias, Avía, Avíamos, Avíades, Avían, | Dádo. | Hauéna bauéui bauéua bauéamo bauéuate bauéuano | Dato. | Dederam, &c. | I had Giuen, &c. |
| Futur. | Daré, Darás, Dará. Darémos, Daréys, Darán. | | Daró, Daróti, Dará. Darémo, Daréte, Daráno. | | Dabo, &c. | I shall or will Giue, &c. |
| | Dá tu, Dé aquél. Démos, Dád, Dén. | | Da tu, Dia colui. Diámo, Date, Diano. | | Da dato, Det dato, &c. | Give thou, &c. |

Imperative mod.

| | | | |
|---|---|------------------------------|----------------|
| Dá tu, Dé aquél. Démos, Dád, Dén. | Da tu, Dia colui. Diámo, Date, Diano. | Da dato, Det dato, &c. | Give thou, &c. |
|---|---|------------------------------|----------------|

Subjunctive mod.

| | | | | |
|-------------|--|---|-----------------|--|
| Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | | |
| Pres. Como | YO De, tu des, aquel De, demos, deys, dén, | Io Dia, tu dia, colui dia. diámo, diáte, diano, | Dem, &c. cum | When I doe giue, &c. |
| Imper. Como | diéra, daria, diésse, diéras, dariás, diésses, diéra, daria, diésse, diéramos, daríamos, diéssemos, diérades, dariádes, diéssedes, diéran, darian, diéssen. | diéssi, darei, daria, diéssi, daresti, diéssi, darebbe, daria, déssimo, darémmo, déstte, daresté, déstero, darébbono, dariano, | Cum | Darem, &c. When I did giue, &c. |
| Perf. Como | áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, | Dádo. Quando babbia, habbi, habbia, babbiamo, babbiate, habbiano. | Dato. Cum | Dederim, &c. When I have giuen, &c. |

Pluperf.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

37

| | | | | | |
|-----------------------------------|---|---|---|---------------------------------------|--|
| Pluperfect. Como | <i>uvíera, oꝝ uvíesse, uvíeros, oꝝ uvíes, etc., uvíera, oꝝ uvíesse,</i> | <i>Quando</i> | <i>chauessi, bauerei, bauessi, baueresthi, bauesse, baueretibi,</i> | <i>Cum D. dissem, &c.</i> | <i>When I had gi-</i> <i>uen, &c.</i> |
| | | <i>Dádo</i> | <i>bauessimo, baueremmo, bauesse, bauereste, bauessero, bauereribono,</i> | <i>Dáto.</i> | |
| Futur. Como | <i>Diére, Diéres, Diére,</i> | <i>Quando</i> | <i>baueró, baueráis, bauerá,</i> | <i>Cum Dederó, &c.</i> | <i>When I shal giue, &c.</i> |
| | | <i>Díremos, Díredes, Díren.</i> | <i>baueremo, bauerete, baueranno,</i> | <i>Date.</i> | |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

DAR,] Dare,] Dare,] To giue.
Preterperfect tense.
bauer dato, } To haue giuen.
aver Dádo, { dauer dare, } Dediſſe. }
bauer a dare.

Gerund.
Dando,] dando,] dando,] In giuing.
Participle of the Present tense, and Active voice.
El que da,] Dant,] Dans,] giuing.
Participle of the Preter perfect tense and Passive voice.
Dado,] Dato,] Datus] giuen.
Participle of the Future tense.
El quchá, oꝝ elpéra de dár] Essere per dare] Daturam esse] to giue hereafter.

These here written only differ from the Regular verbes in the first Preterperfect tense of their Indicative mod, which always change Car of the Infinitive into qué, and ga into gue, as

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preterperfects. |
|-------------------------------|---------------|------------------------|
| Acerçár, to come neare, | yo Acerco, | Acerqué. |
| Cercár, to compasse, | yo Cérco, | Cerqué. |
| Cargár, to charge, to burden, | yo Cárgo, | Cargué. |
| Achicár, to make little, | yo Achico, | Achiqué. |
| Ahogár, to choake, to dwowne, | yo Ahogo, | Ahogué. |
| Allegár, to come neare. | yo Allégo, | Allegué. |
| Ahorcár, to hang vp, | yo Ahórco, | Ahorqué. |
| Anegár, to dwowne, | yo Anégo, | Anegué. |
| Arrancár, to plucke vp, | yo Arranco, | Arranqué. |
| Arremangár, to tucke vp, | yo Arremángo, | Arremangué. |
| Arriscár, to endanger, | yo Arrisco, | Arrisqué. |
| Apesgár, to weighe downe, | yo Apégo, | Apelgué. |
| Aſſulcár, to furrow, | yo Aſſilco, | Aſſulqué. |
| Bogár, to rowe, | yo Bógo, | Bogué. |
| Bolcár, to tumble downe, | yo Bolco, | Bolqué. |
| Castigár, to chastise, | yo Caſtigo, | Castigué. |
| Calcár, to ticke vnder feet, | yo Cálcо, | Calqué. |
| Colgár, to hang, | yo Cuégo, | Coqué. |
| Cocár, to gape at, to moche, | yo Caválgo, | Cavalgué. |
| Cavalgár, to ride, | yo Chuéco, | Choqué. |
| Chocár, to sucke, | yo Deniégo, | Denegué. |
| Denegár, to deny, | yo Derrucco, | Derrogué. |
| Dericár, to throw downe, | yo Descuégo, | Descolgué. |
| Descolgár, to unhang, | yo Desfúeço, | Desfogué. |
| Desfogár, to coule, | | |

PP 3

Embarcát,

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preterperfects. |
|--------------------------------|---------------|-----------------|
| Embarcar, to embark, | yo Embárco, | Embarqué. |
| Desligar, to untie, | yo Desligo, | Desligué. |
| Embaucar, to cast into a hole, | yo Embáuco, | Embauqué. |
| Embocár, <i>idem</i> , | yo Embóco, | Emboqué. |
| Desnegár, to recant, | yo Desnégico, | Desnegué. |
| Enarcár, to chuse up, | yo Enárco, | Enarqué. |
| Divulgár, to publish, | yo Divulgó, | Divulgué. |
| Empégár, to pitch, | yo Empíego, | Empégué. |
| Fabricár, to frame, | yo Fabríco, | Fabriqué. |
| Encenegár, to durt, | yo Encienégo, | Encenegué. |
| Fregár, to rub, | yo Friegó, | Fregué. |
| Holgár, to be glad, | yo Holgó, | Holgué. |
| Mancár, to want, | yo Mánco, | Manqué. |
| Jugár, to play, | yo Júego, | Jugué. |
| Marcár, to marke, | yo Márco, | Marqué. |
| Mercár, to buy, | yo Mércico, | Merce. |
| Mascár, to chew, | yo Málico, | Masqué. |
| Mendigár, to beg, | yo Mendigo, | Mendigué. |
| Navegár, to saile, | yo Návego, | Navegué. |
| Otorgár, to grant, | yo Otorgó, | Ozorgué. |
| Peliscár, to pinch, | yo Pelisco, | Pelisqué. |
| Pagár, to pay, | yo Págó, | Pague. |
| Pescár, to fish, | yo Pélico, | Pesqué. |
| Plegár, to fold, | yo Pliégo, | Pliégué. |
| Regár, to water, | yo Riégo, | Regué. |

These here above and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in as afore going, as Juzgár, to judge, the Indicative present Tense, Júzgo, I judge, Preter-imperfect, Juzgáva, first Preterperfect, Julgé, the second Perfect, He Juzgado, the Preterplus-perfect, avia Juzgado, Future, Juzgaré. Imperative, Juzga. The Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive, Oxalá or Si Juzgue, the Preterimperfect Tense, Juzgára, juzgaría, juzgáse, Perfect, áya juzgado, Pluperfect, uvíra or uvíesse Juzgado, Future, Juzgaré. Infinitive, Juzgar, Participle, Juzgado.

ESTAR

Of Verbes Irregular the first Conjugation in AR, as Estár,] in Italian Essere,] in Latine Eſe,] To be, to stand.

Indicative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|-------------------|--|--|---|
| Pres. | { YO ESTO'Y, tu estás, aquel está, | { SO STO, tu stá, colui stá, | { Sto, &c. I stand, or I am, &c. |
| | { estámos, estás, están. | { stámo, státe, stáno. | |
| Imper- fect. | { estábá, estábás, estábá, estábamos, estábades, estábavan. | { stána, stáni, stána, stáuán.o, stáuato, stáuano. | { Stabam, &c. I was, or did stand, &c. |
| First Perfect. | { estuve, estuviste, estuvo, estuvimos, estuvistes, estuvieron. | { stetti, & stei, steti, stette, stémo, stéste, stettero. | { stet, &c. I have been, or haue stood, &c. |

Second

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

39

| | | | | | |
|-------------|---|-----------|---|------------|----------------|
| yo Hé, | { | sóno, | { | steti, &c. | I have been, |
| tu ás, | { | sei, | { | ut supra. | or haue stood, |
| aqucl há, | { | é, | { | &c. | &c. |
| Second. | { | Estado. | { | | |
| hémox, | { | síamo, | { | | |
| avéys, | { | séte, | { | | |
| áu, | { | sóno, | { | | |
| Pluperfect. | { | era. | { | | |
| avía, | { | eri, | { | | |
| avias, | { | era, | { | | |
| avías, | { | Estado. | { | | |
| avíamos, | { | erauámo, | { | steteram, | I had beene, |
| avíades, | { | erauate, | { | &c. | or had stood, |
| avian, | { | erano, | { | | &c. |
| Future. | { | staró, | { | | |
| estaré, | { | staráj, | { | | |
| estarás, | { | stará, | { | | |
| estarás, | { | starémo, | { | Stabo, &c. | I shal or wil |
| estaréys, | { | staréte, | { | | stand or be, |
| estarán. | { | staranno. | { | | &c. |

Imperative mood.

| | | | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------|--------------------------------|
| Impe- rativus mod. | Está, sta, estás, estás, | fiá, fiás, | fa, fato, etc. | be thou, or stand thou, &c. |
| | estemos, estad, estén. | fiámos, fiáis, fiámen. | | |

Subiectus mode.

| | <i>Spanish.</i> | <i>Italian.</i> | <i>Latine.</i> |
|---------------|---|--|---|
| <i>Pres.</i> | Esté, Estés, Esté, Como | Stia, Stij, Stia, <i>Quando</i> | Stem, &c. When I am or stād, &c. |
| | Estémos, Estéys, Estén. | Stiamo, Stiate, Stiano, | <i>Cum</i> |
| <i>Imper.</i> | Estuviéra, estaría, estuviéssle, Estuviéras, estarias, estuviéssles, Estuviéra, estaría, estuviéssle, Como | Staréis, stéssi, staria, Staréssi, stéssi, Starrebbe, stésse, staria, <i>Quando</i> | Starem, &c. when I stood or was, &c. |
| <i>perf.</i> | Estuviéramos, estaríamos, estuviésslemos, Estuviérades, estariades, estuviéssledes, Estuviéran, estarían, estuviésslen. | Starémo, stéssimo, Starésse, stésse, Starébbono, stariano, stéssero. | <i>Cum</i> |
| <i>Perf.</i> | A'ya, áyas, áya, Como | Sia, Sij, Sia, <i>estádo. Quando</i> | Steterim, &c. when I have stood or been, &c. |
| | Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan, | Siámo, Siáte Siáno, | <i>Cum</i> |
| | | { Stato { Stati. | |
| | | uviéra, | |

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

| | | | | | | | |
|-------------------|------|--|----------------|--------------------------------|---------------|--------------------|---|
| Pluper. | Como | uvíéra, <i>oz</i> uvíéſſe, uvíeras, <i>oz</i> uvíéſſes, uvíera, <i>oz</i> uvíéſſe, | estádo. Quando | Foffi, Foffi, Foffe, | Státo. Cum | ſtetiffem, etc. | When I had bee, <i>or</i> stood, &c. |
| | | uvíeramos, <i>oz</i> uvíéſſemos, uvíerades, <i>oz</i> uvíéſſedes, uvíeran, <i>oz</i> uvíéſſen, | | Fóſſimo, Fofſe, Foffero. | | | |
| First future. | Como | Estuvíére, Estuvíéres, Estuvíére, | Quando | Saró, Sarai, Sará, | Státo. Cum | ſtetero, etc. | When I had <i>or</i> wil stand <i>or</i> be, &c. |
| | | Estuvíéremos, Estuvíéredes, Estuvíeren, | | Sarémo, Sarete, Saránno | | | |
| Second future. | Como | uvíére, <i>oz</i> avré, uvíères, <i>oz</i> avrás, uvíére, <i>oz</i> avrá. | estádo. | Saró, Sarai, Sará, | Státo. Cum | ſtetero, etc. | When I had <i>or</i> wil be <i>or</i> stand &c. |
| | | uvíéremos, <i>oz</i> avrémos, uvíéredes, <i>oz</i> avréys, uvíeren, <i>oz</i> avrán, | | Sarémo, Sarete, Saránno | | | |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Estár,] | Stare,] | Stare,] | to stand <i>or</i> be, |
| avér Estádo,] | bauer Státo,] | Stetiffi,] | Preterperfect tense. |
| | | | Future tense. |
| | avér <i>or</i> esperár d'estár, { | douer Stare, { effer per Stare, { | Staturum eſſe, |
| | | | Gerund. |
| Estándo,] | Stando,] | Stando,] | In standing <i>or</i> being. |
| Estádo,] | Stato,] | Statuſ, [| Stand <i>or</i> be. |

These Verbes following make their Present tense of the Indicative, by changing the last
Gable ſame one of the Infinitive, the *c* into *ie*, and the *o* into *ue*, as

| Infinitive. | Pres. | Preterperfect. |
|--------------------------------|----------------|----------------|
| Aſſentár, to ſit, to ſet, | yo aſſiento, | Aſſenté. |
| Approvár, to allow, | yo appruévo, | Aprové. |
| Sentár, to ſit, | yo ſiénto, | Senté. |
| Sonár, to ſound, | yo ſuénco, | Soné. |
| Conſervár, to keepe, | yo conſervó, | Conſervé. |
| Atronár, to thunder, | yo atruéno, | Attroné. |
| Cegár, to make blinde, | yo ciégo, | Ciegué. |
| Contár, to reckon, | yo cuénto, | Conté. |
| Cerrár, to ſhut, to locke, | yo ciérro, | Cerré. |
| Degollár, to kill, to behead, | yo deguéllo, | Degollé. |
| Enterrár, to put in the earth, | yo entierro, | Enterré. |
| Derrocár, to thow downe, | yo deruéco, | Derroqué. |
| Colgar, to hang. | yo cucigo, | Colgué. |
| Defterrár, to banish, | yo deftiérrer, | Defterré. |
| Defollár, to paunch, | yo desuéllo, | Desollé. |
| Hollár, to tread on, | yo huélla, | Hollé. |
| Entefár, to bend, | yo entiéfo, | Entefé. |
| Segár, to cut, | yo fiégo, | Sequé. |
| Refollár, to breath, | yo refuéllo, | Refollé. |
| Resolgár, idem, | yo resuélgo, | Resolgué. |
| Temblá, to tremble, | yo trémblo, | Temblé. |
| Tentár, to assay, | yo tiénto, | Tenté. |
| Tropecár, to ſtumble, | yo tropiéço, | Tropecé. |
| Aderegár, to make readie, | yo aderéſco, | Aderescé. |

Of Verbes Irregular of the first Conjugation in AR, as ANDAR, ANDAR
In Italian, Andare, in Latine, Ire, Gradi, to Goe.

Indicative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | I Goe, thou Goest, &c. |
|--------------------|---|--|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Past. | A'ndp, ándas, ánda; | { Vo, & Vado, Vai, Va, | { Eo, is, &c. | |
| | Andámos, andáys, ándan. | { Andiáme, Andáte, Vánna. | | |
| | Andáva, Andávas, Andáva. | { Andina, Andaui, Andáua, | { Ibam, &c. | I did goe, &c. |
| Imper. itt. | Andávamos, Andávades, Andávan. | { Andauámo, Andauáte, Andauáno. | | |
| | Andúve, Anduviste, Andúvo, | { Andáii, Andáifi, Andó, | { Iuie, &c. | I haue gone, &c. |
| first Perf. | Anduvímos, Anduvistes, Anduvíron. | { Andámmo, Andásse, Andárono. | { Iui, &c. ut supra. | I haue gone, &c. as before. |
| Second Perfect. | Hémos, avéys án, | { Sono, Sei, é, | { Andáto. | |
| | Avía, Avías, Avía, | { Siámo, Sete, Sono, | { Andati. | |
| Pluper. etc. | Avíamos, Avíades, Avian, | { E'ra, éri, éra, | { Andato. | { Iueram, &c. |
| | Andaré, Andaras, Andará, | { Eravámo, eravate, érano. | { Andati. | |
| future. | Andarémos, Andaréys, Andará. | { Anderó, andró, Anderái, andrai, Anderá, andrá, | | |
| | | { Anderémo, andrémo, Anderéte, andréte, Anderáno, andráno. | | |
| | | | { Ibo, &c. | I shall or will goe, &c. |

Imperative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Ito, &c. | Goe thou, &c. |
|--|------------------------------|---|----------|---------------|
| | A'nda tu, ánde aquél, | { Vatu, Vada, ož vada colui, | | |
| | Andémos, Andád, ández. | { Andiámo, Andáte, Vádano, ož vádino. | | |

ANDAR.

Of Verbes Irregular the first Conjugation in AR.

Subiungitive mod.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|------------------|---|---|---|
| Pres. Como | { ánde, ándes, ánde, andémos, andéys, ánden. | { vada, vadi, vada, vadi, vada, vadi, | { Eam, &c. When I do go, &c. |
| Imper. Como | { anduvíera, andaría, anduvíesse, anduvíeras, andariás, anduvíesses, anduvíera, andarió, anduvíesse, Anduvíeramos, endaríamos, anduvíessimos, anduvíeras, andariades, anduvíessedes, anduvíeran, andarián, anduvíesen. | { andassi, andarei, anderie, andassis, andericie, andasse, andericibi, anderia. | { Item, &c. When I did go, &c. |
| Perf. Como | { áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, aya'ys, áyan, | { fia, fii, fia, fiamo, fiate, fiano, | { siuerim, &c. When I haue gone, &c. |
| Pluper. Como. | { uviéra, oꝝ uviésses, uviéra, oꝝ uviésses, uviéra, oꝝ uviésses, uviéramos, oꝝ uviéssimos, uviérades, oꝝ uviéssedes, uviéran, oꝝ uviéssen, | { foffi, sarei, fossi, sarefi, fisse, sarebbe, fossimo, saremmo, fisse, sareste, fissero, sarebbero. | { iuissen, &c. When I had gone, &c. |
| Future. Como. | { anduvíere, anduvíeres, anduvíere, anduvíeremos, anduvíeredes, anduvíeren. | { faró, farai, fará, farémo, faréte, faranno. | { iuero, &c. When I shal oꝝ will go hereaf- ter, &c. |

Infinitive mod, Present tense.

ANDAR,] Andare,] ire,] to go;

Preterperfect tense.

Avér andado,] Effere andato,] iuisse,] to haue gone.

Future tense.

Avér oꝝ esperár de andar,] Effer per andare,
Dixer andare,] Hauer ad andare,] Itinum esse, { to go, oꝝ about to goe.

Gerund.

Andando,] Andando,] Endo,] in going.

Participle of the Present tense and Actiu voice.

El que ánda,] Andante,] Euns,] one going.

Participle of the Preter and Passiu voice.

Andado,] Andato,] gone.

of

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as Traér,
Sabér, Tenér, Podér, Querér, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér.

TRAER.

Indicative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|---------------------|--|---|---|
| | yo TRAY GO, tu tráes, aquel tráe, | in APPORTO, tu appórti, colui apporta, | Adduco, &c I fetch or bring, &c. |
| Past. | traímos, tráis, tráen. | apportámo, apportate, apportano. | |
| | Traya, trayas, traya, | apportaia, apportai, apportaia, | Adducebam &c. I did fetch or bring, &c. |
| Imper. | trayamos, trayades, trayan, | apportauamo, apportauate, apportauano. | |
| | trúxe, or tráxe, trúxiste, or traxiste, trúxo, or tráxo, | apportai, apportáste, apporto, | Adduxi, &c I haue fetcht or brought, &c. |
| First. Perf. | truximos, or traximos, truxistes, or traxistes, truxeron, or traxeron, | apportiammo, apportáste, apportaron, apportáro, apportár. | |
| Second. perfect. | há, has, &c. | be, hai, &c. | Adduxi, &c I haue fetcht or brought, &c. |
| Plus. perf. | avía, avias, &c. | bauéa, bauéui, &c. | Adduxe- ram, &c. I had fetcht or brought, &c. |
| Futur. | traeré, traerás, traerá, traerémos, traeréys, traerán, | apportaré, apportari, apportará, apportarémo, apportaréte apportarámo. | Adducam, &c. I shall or will fetch or bring, &c. |

Imperative mood.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|--|--|
| | Tráe tu, tráyga aquel. | Apporta tu, apporti colui, | Adduc, ad- ducito, Bring or fetch thou, &c. |
| Impe- rativus mod. | traímos, traíd, tráyan, | apportámo, apportáte, apportino, | |

of

TRAER of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as **TRAER**, in Italian
Apportare, Arrecare, Trahere, Adducere, Menare, in Latine Adducere,
Assire, Trahere, to fetch, to Bring, to Carry to Draw.

Subiunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|----------|---|--|--|
| Pres. | Tráyga or Tráya, Tráygas or Tráyas, &c. Trayga, or Tráya, | Apporti, Apporti, Apporti, | Adducam, &c. |
| Como | Traygámos, Traygás, Tráyan. | Quando Apportámo, Apportate, Apportino. | When I doe fetch, or bring, &c. |
| Imperf. | Truxéra, Traería, Truxéss, Truxeras, Traerías, Truxéles, Truxéra, Traería, Truxéss. | Apportaréi or Apportáss, Apportaréss or Apportáss, Apportarebbe or Apportáss. | Adduce- rem, &c. |
| Como | Truxérámos, Traeríamos, Truxéssimos Truxérades, Traeríades, Truxéssedes, Truxérán, Traerían, Truxéssen, you shal finde in some authors Traxéss, Traxésses, &c. | Quando Apportarémmo or Apportássimo Apportareste or Apportássete, Apportarebbono or Apportássero | When I did fetch or bring, &c. |
| perfect. | ayáa, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan, | Traydo. Quando Habbiá, Habbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano, | Adduxerim, &c. |
| Como | uvíéra or uvíéss, uvíeras or uvíésses, uvíéra or uvíéss, uvíéramos or uvíéssimos, uvíérades or uvíéssedes, uvíérán or uvíéssen, | Traydo. Quando Haueréi or Hauéss, Haueréss or Hauéss, Hauerrebbe or Hauéss, Hauerémmo or Hauéssimo Haueréste or Hauéssete, Hauerebbano or Hauéssero, | Cum Addux- issem, &c. |
| Pluperf. | Truxére, Truxéres, Truxére. | Haueró Hauerá Hauerá | Adduxero, &c. |
| Como | Truxéremos, Truxéredes, Truxéren. | Quando Hauerémo Haueréte Haueráanno | When I shall bring or fetch, &c. |
| Future. | | Apportato. Cum | |
| Como | | | |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

TRAER] Apportare] Adducere,] to Bring, to Fetch.

Preter perfect tense.

Avér **Traydo**,] Hauer Apportato,] Adduxisse,] to haue brought.

Future tense.

Avér oꝝ Esperár de traer, Duer Apportare, Hauer ad Apportare, Adducturum esse,] to bring hereafter.
Eſſere per Apportare.

Gerund.

Trayéndo,] Apportando,] Adducendo,] in bringing or fetching.

Participle of the Actine and Presens tense.

El que tráe,] Apportante,] Adducens,] one bringing.

Participle of the Passine and Preter tense.

Traydo,] Apportato,] Adductus,] brought.

Participle of the Future tense.

el que ha oꝝ espéra, Duerendo Apportare, Adductu- About to bring
de Traer, Eſſendo per Apportare, yrs, or fetch.

These

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

45

These Verbes following ending in cer, make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding an s before c, thus,

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preter. |
|---------------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Acaecer, to happen, | yo acaesco, | Acaecy. |
| Acontecer, idem, | yo acontesco, | Acontesci. |
| Adolescer, to be sozie or sickle, | yo adolesco, | Adolesci. |
| Agradescer, to give thanks, | yo agradesco, | Agradecy. |
| Amortecer, to swoone, | yo amortesco, | Amorteci. |
| Desfallecer, idem, | yo desfalleesco, | Desfallecy. |
| Apetecer, to desire, | yo apetesco, | Apetecy. |
| Crecer, to grow, | yo creesco, | Creci. |
| Encallecer, to wax hard as hawone, | yo encallesco, | Encallecí. |
| Encarecer, to augment | yo encareesco, | Encareci. |
| Empecer, to hinder, | yo empesco, | Empeci. |
| Establecer, to establish, | yo estableesco, | Estableci. |
| Fenecer, to finish; | yo fenesco, | Feneci. |
| Pacer, to feed. | yo pasco, | Paci. |
| Perecer, to perish, | yo peresco, | Perecy. |

Except.

Vencér, to ouercome, yo venço; Vencí.

In all other Moods and Tenses they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the second Conjugation in E.R.

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicative, by changing g into j, which the Spaniards in writing doe much use, setting downe the one for the other, as well in pounes as in Verbes, as in Pounes Magestad, Majestad: Mensaje, Mensage, and the like.

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preter. |
|---------------------------------|------------|---------|
| Encoger, to withdraw, | yo encójo, | Encogi. |
| Recoger, to gather vp or retire | yo recójo, | Recogí. |
| Acoger, to entartaine, | yo acójo, | Acogy. |
| Escoger, to chuse out, | yo escójo, | Escogy. |
| Coger, to gather, | yo cójo, | Cogy. |
| Vngir, to anoint, | yo únjo, | Vngí. |

In other Moods and Tenses like the Regulars.

These make their Present tense of the Indicative, by adding i in the last syllable saue one of the Infinitive, as

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preter. |
|------------------------------|--------------|----------|
| Defender, to defend, | yo defiendo, | Defendí. |
| Dehendér, to cleane asunder. | yo dehiéndo, | Dehendi. |

And these make the Present tense by turning o in the last syllable saue one of the Infinitive into ue, as

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preter. |
|--------------------------------|--------------|----------|
| Bolvér, to turne, | yo buélvo, | Bolví. |
| Rebolvér, to returne, | yo rebuélvo, | Rebolví. |
| Solér, to be wont, | yo suélo, | Solí. |
| Colér, to sow, | yo cuélo, | Colý. |
| Cozér, to seethe, | yo cuézo, | Cozí. |
| Dolér, to be sozie, to grieue, | yo duélo, | Dolí. |

And these following thus,

| | | |
|---------------------------|------------|--------|
| Caér, to fall, | yo cágo, | Cay. |
| Roér, to gnaw, | yo róygo, | Roy. |
| Valér, to be worth, | yo válgo, | Valí. |
| Traér, to fetch oz bring, | yo tráygo, | Trúxe. |
| Oyr, to heare, | yo óygo, | Oy'. |

In other Moods and Tenses like the Regular Verbes.

In like manner thorow all Moods and Tenses are his Compounds declined, as Retraér,
to withdraw, yo Retráygo, I doe withdraw, Retríxe, I haue withdrawne, &c.

SABER.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as SABER,
in Italian Sapere, Latine Scire, Sapere, to know.

Indicative mod.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|--------------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Pres. | yo SE', tu Sábes, aquél Sábe. | Io So, tu Sáis, colui Sa. | Scio, Scis, &c. |
| | Sabémos, Sabéys, Sabén. | Sappiamo, Sapete, Sanno. | Sciebam, &c. |
| Imperf. | Sabía, Sabias, Sabía. | Sapéua, Sapéni, Sapéna. | Scini, &c. |
| | Sabíamos, Sabíades, Sabian. | Sapeuámō, Sapeuátē, Sapeuánō. | Scini, &c. |
| First Perfect. | Súpe, Supiste, Súpo. | Séppi, Sappetti, Seppé. | Scini, &c. |
| | Supimos, Supistes, Supíeron. | Sappémō, Sappéste, Séppero. | Scini, &c. |
| Second Perfect. | He as a | Ho Hai Ha | Sciu, &c. ut ante. |
| | Hémos avéys án | Habbiamo Hauéte, Hanno | Saputo. |
| Pluperf. | Avía Avías Avía | Hauéua Hauéus Hauéna | Sciueram, &c. |
| | Avíamos Aviades Avían | Hauéuamo Hauéuate Hauéhanō | Saputo. |
| Future. | Sabré, Sabrés, Sabrá. | Soppró, Sapprai, Sapprá. | Sciam, &c. |
| | Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán. | Sapprémo, Sappréte, Sapprámo. | I shall or will know, &c. |

Imperative mod.

| | | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|--------------------|
| Sábe tu, Sepa aquél. | Sappi tu, Sappia colui. | Sci, Scito, &c. |
| Sepámos, Sabéd, Sépan. | Sappiámō, Sappiátē, Sappiánō. | Know thou, &c. |

Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as SABER. SABER.

Subiunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|----------------|--|--|--|
| Pres. | S E' P A, Sépas, Sépa, | S APPIA, Sappi, Sappa, | Sciam, &c. When I doe knowe, &c. |
| Como | Sepámos, Sepáys, Sépan. | Quando Sappiamo, Sappiate, Sappiano. | Cum |
| Imperf. | Supiéra, fabría, supiéssé, Supiéras, fabriás, supiésses, Supiéra, fabría, supiéssé, | Suprei, sapéssi, Saprésti, sapéssi, Saprebbe, sapesse, | Scirem, &c. When I did knowe, &c. |
| Como | Supiéramos, fabriámos, supiéssemos, Supiérades, fabriádes, supiéssedes, Supíeran, fabrián, supiéßen. | Quando Saprímo, sapéssimo, Sapréstis, sapéste, Sapríbbero, sapéssero, | Cum |
| Perfect. | A ya, áyas, áya, | Sabido. Hábia, Hábbi, Hábbia, | Cum Sciuerim, &c. When I haue knowone, &c. |
| Como | Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan, | Sabido. Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno, | Saputo. |
| Pluper. | Uviéra, ož uviéssé, uviéras, ož uviésses, uviéra, ož uviéssé, | Quando Hauerei, hauéssi, Hauerestis, hauéssi, Hauerebbe, hauéssé, | Sciuisse, &c. When I had knowone, &c. |
| Como | uviéramos, ož uviéssemos, uviérades, ož uviéssedes, uviéran, ož uviéssen, | Sabido. Hauerémo, hauéssimo, Haueréte, hauéste, Hauerébbono, hauéssero, | Saputo. |
| First Future. | Supiére, Supiéres, Supiére, | Quando Haueró, Haueráii, Hauerá, | Sciiero, &c. When I shal know, &c. |
| Como | Supíeremos, Supíeredes, Supíerten. | Sabido. Hauerémo, Haueréte, Haueráno, | Saputo. |
| Second Future. | Uviére, ož avré, uviéres, ož avrás, uviére, ož avrá, | Quando Haueró, Haueráii, Hauerá, | Sciiero, &c. When I shal know, &c. |
| Como | uviéremos, ož avrémos, uviéredes, ož avréys, uviéten, ož aurán, | Sabido. Hauerémo, Haueréte, Haueráno, | Saputo. |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

SABER,] Sapére,] Scire,] to know.

avér Sabido,] bauer Saputo,] Sciuisse,] Future tense.

avér ož el- perár de Hauer a sapére Sciturum esse,] to haue knowne,

, Sabér,] Essere per sapére,] Future tense.

to know hereafter.

Gerund.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

| | Gerund. | |
|----------------|--|---|
| Sabiéndo,] | Sapendo,] | Sciendo,] |
| el que Sábe,] | Participle of the Present, and Active, quello chi Sa,] | Sciens,] |
| Sabido,] | Participle of the P̄ter tense and Passive, Saputo,] | in knowing. one knowing. knowone. |

TENER Declining of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in ER, as TENER,
In Italian, and Latine, Tenere, to Hold.

Indicative mode.

| | | | |
|--------------------|--|---|--|
| Present. | YO TE'NGO, tu Tiénes, aquél Tiéne, | IO TE'NGO, tu Tiéni, colui Tiene, | Teneo, &c. I doe hold, &c. |
| | Tenémos, Tenéys, Tiénen. | Teníamo, Tenéte, Téngono. | |
| Imperf. | Tenía, Tenías, Tenía, | Tenéua, & tenéa, Tenéui, Tenéua, & tenéa, | Tenebam, &c. I did hold, &c. |
| | Teníamos, Teníades, Tenían. | Teneuámō, Teneuáte, Tenehano. | |
| First Perfect. | Túve, Tuviste, Túvo, | Tenui, Teneffi, Tenne, | Tenui, &c. I haue held, &c. |
| | Tuvimos, Tuvistes, Tuiéron. | Tennémmo, Teneſte, Tennenro. | |
| Second Perfect. | Yo He, Tu as, aquél á, | Ho, Hai, Ha, | Tenui, &c. I haue held, &c. as myt aboue. |
| | Hémos, avéys, án, | Habiámo, Hauete, Hámno. | |
| Pluperf. | Avía, Avías, Avía, | Hauéua, Hauéui, Haucia, | Tenueram, &c. I had held, &c. |
| | Avíamos, Avíades, Avian, | Haueuámō, Haueuáte, Haueuano, | |
| Future. | Tendré, & Terné, Tendrás, & Ternás, Tendrá, & Terná, | Temeró, & Terró, Tenerái, & Terrái, Temerá, & Terra, | Tenebo, &c. I shal or will hold, &c. |
| | Tendrémos, & Ternémos, Tendréys, & Ternéys, Tendrán, & ternán, | Tenerémo, & Terrémo, Tenerete, & Terréſte, Teneránnō, & Terránnō, | |

Imperative

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

49

Imperative mōd.

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| { Tén tu, Ténga aquél, Tengámos, Ten.d, Téngan. | { Téni tu, Ténga colui, Teniamo, Tenete, Téngano. | { Tene tu, &c. { Hold thou, &c. |
|---|---|---|

Subjunctive mode.

| | | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|----------------|------|--|--|--|---|
| P̄fes. | Como | { Ténga, Téngas, Ténga, Tengámos, Tengás, Téngan. | { Tenga, Tenghi, Tenga, Teniamo, Teniate, Téngano. | { Teneam, &c. | { When I doe hold, &c. |
| Imperf. | Como | { Tuvíera, ternía, tuviéss, Tuvíeras, ternías, tuviésses, Tuvíera, ternía, tuviéss, Tuvíeramos, terníamos, tuviéssemos, Tuvíerades, terníades, tuviéssedes, Tuvíeran, ternian, tuviéssen. | { Tenéssi, teneréi, teneria, Teneſſi, teneresi, Tenéſſe, tenerebbe, teneria, Tenéſſimo, tenerémmo, Teneſſie, teneresi, Tenéſſero, tenerebbono, | { Tenerem, &c. | { When I did hold, &c. |
| Perfect. | Como | { Ay'a, áyas, aya, Ayámos, Ayáys, Áyan, | { Habbia, Habbi, Habbia, Habbiamo, Habbiate, Habbiano, | { Tenuerim, &c. | { When I haue holden, &c. |
| Pluper. | Como | { uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéras, or uviéſſes, uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéramos, or uviéſſemos, uviérades, or uviéſſedes, uviéran, or uviéſſen, | { Hauerei, or Hauéſſi, Haueréſſi, or Hauéſſi, Hauerrebbe, or Hauéſſe, Hauerémmo, or Hauéſſimo, Haueréſſe, or Hauéſſe, Hauerébbono, or Hauéſſero, | { Tenuissem, &c. | { When I had holden, &c. |
| Future. | Como | { Tuvíere, Tuvíeres, Tuvíere, Tuvíremos, Tuvíredes, Tuvíten. | { { { { { { | { Tenuero, &c. | { When I shal or will hold, &c. |
| Second Future. | Como | { uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, | { Hauerb, Hauerai, Hauerá, Hauerímo, Hauerete, Haueranno, | { Tenuero, &c. utamie. | { When I shal or will hold, &c. as next aboue. |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

TENER,] Tenere,] Teneſſe,] to Hold.

Preterperfect tense.

avr Tenido,] Hauer Tenuto,] Tenuiffe,] to haue Holden.

Qq 3

Future

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Future tense.

Avér de Tenér, Deuér tenére,
Hauer a tenare,
Essere per tenere, Tenturum esse,] to Hold hereafter.

Gerund.

Teniéndo,] Tenéndo,] Tenendo,] In Holding.

Participle of the Present and Actne.

El que tiéne,] Tenénte] Tenens,] one Holding.

Participle of the Preter and Passiu.

Tenido,] Tenito,] Tenuis, Holden.

Like this verbe simple are his Compounds in all points declined thorow all Moods and Tenses, as Manténér, to maintaine, yo Manténgó, Mantúve. Detenér, to detaine or stay, yo Deténgó, Detúve. Retenér, to withhold or retaine, yo Reténgó, Retúve. Sostenér, to sustaine or uphold, yo Sosténgó, Sustúve.

PODER the second Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in E R, as PODER,
in Italian Potere, in Latine Posse, to be able.

Indicative mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|--------------------|--|--|---|--|
| Present. | yo P U E D O, tu Puédes, aquel Puéde, | P O S S O, Puoi, Puo, | Possim, &c. | I can or am able, &c. |
| Imper- fect. | Podémos, Podéys, Puéden. | Possiamo, Potete, Possano & Pónno. | Poteram, &c. | I was able, &c. |
| First Perfect. | Podiamos, Podiadess, Podian. | Potemmo, Poteste, Poterono & Póttero. | Potui, &c. | I could or hane beene able, &c. |
| Second Perfect. | Púde, Pudiste, Púdo, | Potei, Potestis, Putei, | Potui, &c. ut supra. | I could or hane beene as- able, &c. as next aboue. |
| Pluper- fect. | Pudimos, Pudistes, Pudiéron. | Potémmo, Potestis, Poterono & Póttero. | Potueram, &c. | I had beene able, &c. |
| Future. | He as a Hemos avéys an Avia Avias Avia Avíamos Avíades Avian Podré, Podrás, Podrá, Podrémos, Podréys, Podrán, | Ho Hai Ha Habbiamo Hauete Hanno Hauéua Haueno Hauéua Hauenamo Hauenáte Hauenáno Potré, Potrai, Potrá, Potremo, Potréte, Potranno, | Potui, et supra. Potuto. Potéto. | I could or hane beene as- able, &c. as next aboue. I had beene able, &c. I shal or wil be able, &c. |

Imperative mood wanteth as in the Latine.

of

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as PODER.

PODER

Subjunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|-------------------|---|--|--------------------|--|
| Pret. | Pueda, puedás, puedá, | Possa, possi, possa, | Possim, &c. | When I can or be able, &c. |
| Como | puedámos, puedás, puedán, | Quando possiamo, & potiamo, possate, & potiate, possano. | Cum | |
| Imper. fut. | Pudiera, pudiese, pudieras, pudíeſſes, pudiera, pudiese, | potéſſi, potréi, potría, potéſſi, potréſſi, potéſſi, potrébbo, potría, | Potsem, &c. | When I could or might be able, &c. |
| Como | pudiéramos, podriámos, pudiéſſemos, pudiérades, podriádes, pudiéſſedes, pudiéran, podrian, pudiéſſen. | potéſſimo, potrémmo, potéſſe, potréſſe, potéſſero, potrébbono, potriano, | Cum | |
| Perf. | áya, áyas, áya, | abbia, abbi, abbia, | Potue- rim, &c. | When I have been able, &c. |
| Como | áyamos, ayáys, áyan, | babbiámo, babbiáte, babbiáno, | Cum | |
| Plus- perfect. | Uviéra, &c. uviéſſe, Uviéra, &c. uviéſſes, Uviéra, &c. uviéſſe, | baueſſi, baueſſi, baueſſi, baueſſi, baueſſe, baueſſe, | Potuiſſem, &c. | When I had been able, &c. |
| Como | uviéramos, &c. uviéſſemos, uviérades, &c. uviéſſedes, uviéran, &c. uviéſſen, | baueſſimo, baueſſe, baueſſe, baueſſe, baueſſero, baueſſe, | Potuiſſo | |
| Fut. Futur. | Pudiére, pudiéres, pudiére, | | Cum | |
| Como | pudiéremos, pudiéredes, pudiéren. | | Potuero, &c. | When I shall be as- ble here- after, &c. |
| Second Futur. | Uviére, &c. avré Uviéres, &c. avrás, Uviére, &c. avrá, | baueſſo, baueſſai, baueſſára, | Quando | |
| Como | uviéremos, &c. avrémos, uviéredes, &c. avrécys, uviéren, &c. avrán. | baueſſémo, baueſſeté, baueſſáno, | Potuero, &c. | When I shall or will be as- ble here- after, &c., as next above. |
| Podido. | | | Cum | |
| Quando | | | utancé. | |
| Potuto. | | | Potuero. | |
| Cum | | | | |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

Poder,] Potere,] Posse,] To be able.

Preterperfect tense.

Avér podido,] Hauer potuto.] Potuisse,] To have been able.

Gerund.

Pudiéndo,] Potendo,] In being able.

Participle.

Podido,] Potuto,] Able.

of

Querér. Of Verbes Irregular the second Coningation in ER, as QVERER, in Italian, *Volare,*] in Latine *Velle,*] To will, to loue, or to be willing.

Indicative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|-----------------|--|---|--|
| Pres. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} yo \text{ QVIERO,} \\ tu \text{ Quieres,} \\ aquél \text{ Quiere,} \\ \text{Ptu.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} queremos, \\ queréis, \\ quieren. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} io VO'GLIO, \\ tu vuoi, \\ colui vuole, \\ \text{Ptu.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} vogliamo, \\ voléte, \\ vogliono, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Volo, \\ Vu, &c. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I will, \\ or I will loue, &c. \end{array} \right.$ |
| Imperf. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} queria, \\ querias, \\ queria, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} queriamos, \\ queriades, \\ querian. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} voléua, \\ voléui, \\ voléua. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} voléuamoa, \\ voléuáte, \\ voléuane. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Volebam, \\ &c. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I did will, \\ or I did loue, \\ &c. \end{array} \right.$ |
| First Perfect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} quis, \\ quisiste, \\ quiso, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} quisimos, \\ quisistes, \\ quisieron. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} volli, & volsi, \\ voléssi, \\ volle, & volse. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} volémmo, \\ voléssse, \\ volsero. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Volui, &c. \\ \text{Vt ante.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I have will- \\ led, or I have \\ loued, &c. \end{array} \right.$ |
| Second Perfect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} He, \\ as, \\ a, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} hémox, or avémos, \\ avéys, \\ an, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Ha, \\ Hai, \\ Ha, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Habiámo, \\ Hauéte, \\ Hanno, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Volui, &c. \\ \text{Vt ante.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I have will- \\ led, or I have \\ loued, &c. ag- \\ next abone. \end{array} \right.$ |
| Pluperfect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Avia, \\ Avias, \\ Avia, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Avíamos, \\ Avíades, \\ Avian, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hauéna, \\ Hauéui, \\ Hauéna, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hauenámo, \\ Hauenáte, \\ Hauenano, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Volueram, \\ &c. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I had will- \\ led, or I had \\ loued, &c. \end{array} \right.$ |
| Future. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} querré, \\ querras, \\ querrá, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} querremos, \\ querréys, \\ querrán, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} vorro, \\ vorrai, \\ vorrá, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} vorremo, \\ vorrete, \\ vorrámo. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Volam, &c. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I will, or \\ shall will or \\ loue, &c. \end{array} \right.$ |

Imperative mood.

| | | | |
|------------------|--|--|---|
| Imperative mood. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} queré tu, \\ querá aquél, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} querámox, \\ queréd, \\ querán, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} vuoi tu, \\ voglia colui, \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} vogliamo, \\ vogliate, \\ vogliano, \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Latine \\ wanteth \\ the Imperative \\ mood. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Will thou, or \\ loue thou, &c. \end{array} \right.$ |
|------------------|--|--|---|

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

53

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as QVERER. Querér.

Subiunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|-------------------|--|---|---|
| Pres. | Quéra, or Quérra, &c. Queras, Quéra, | Vóglia, Vógli, Vóglia, | Velim, &c. |
| Como | Querámos, Querás, Querán. | Quando Vogliamo, Vogliate, Vogliano. | Cum When I will or loue, &c. |
| Imperf. | Quisíera, quérria, quisíesse, Quisíeras, querriás, quisíesses, Quisíera, querriá, quisíesse, | Voléssi, vorei, & vorría, Volésti, vorrésti, Volésse, vorrébbe, vorria, | Vellem, &c. |
| Como | Quisíeramos, querriamos, quisíessemos, Quisíerades, querriades, quisíessedes, Quisíeran, querrián, quisíessen. | Voléssimo, vorémmo, Voléste, voréste, Voléssero, vorrébbono, & Quando (vorriano. | Cum When I would or did loue, &c. |
| Perfect. | A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan, | Querido. Hábbia Hábbi Hábbia Habbiamo Habbiate Habbiano | Volue- rim, &c. When I haue wil- led or lo- ued, &c. |
| Pluper. | Uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse, uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen, | Querido. Hauéssi, or bauerei, Hauésti, or baueresti, Hauésse, or bauerebbe, Hauéssimo, or baueremo, Hauéste, or bauereste, Hauéssero, or bauerébbono, | Cum Vola- issim, &c. When I had willed or lo- ued, &c. |
| First Future. | Quisiére, Quisiéres, Quisiére, Quisiéremos, Quisiéredes, Quisiéren. | Quando Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, Haueremo, Hauerete, Haueranno, | Voluero, &c. When I shall will or loue, &c. |
| Second Future. | Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, | Querido. Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueráno, | Voluero, &c. When I shall bee willing or loue, &c. |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

Querér,] Volere,] Velle,] to will or loue.

Preterperfect tense.

avér Querido,] bauer Voluto,] Voluisse,] to haue loued or beene willing.

Gerund.

Queriéndo,] Volendo,] Volendo] In being willing or louing.

Participle.

Querido,] Voluto,] loued, willed.

Add to this Verbe this particle Mas, and so decline it thowzow all mōds and tenses, and it makes the signification to be in Latine Malo, in English I had leifer, I would rather, as yo Quiéro mas, in Latine Malo, I would leifer, or loue more: tu quierés mas, Manu, thou hadst rather or louest more. Preterimperfect tense, yo Quería mas, I would rather or loued more. Preterperfect, Quíle mas, &c.

of

PONER Of Verbes Irregular the second Coningation in ER, as PONER, in Italian Ponere, Porre, Mettere, in Latine, Ponere, Locare, to put, to place.

Indicative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|--------------------|---|---|--|
| Pres. | { YO PONGO, tu Pónes, aquel Póne, | { IO PONGO, tu Poni, colui Pone, | { Pono, &c. I do put, &c. |
| | Plu. | Plu. | |
| | { Ponemos, Ponés, Pónen. | { Poniamo, Ponete, Pongan. | |
| Imper. fect. | { Ponía, Ponías, Ponia, | { Ponéua, Ponéui, Ponéua. | { Ponebam, &c. I did put, &c. |
| | { Poníamos, Poniades, Ponian. | { Poneuámo, Poneuáte, Poneuáno. | |
| First Perfect. | { Púse, Pusíste, Púso, | { Pósi, Ponésti, Póse. | { Posui, &c. I haue put, &c. |
| | { Pusimos, Pusistes, Pusieron. | { Ponémmo, Ponéste, Pósero. | |
| Second Perfect. | { He, as, a, | { Ha, Hai, Ha, | { Posui, &c. I haue put, &c. |
| | { Avémos, y hémos, avéys, an, | { Habiámo, Hauéie, Háno, | |
| Pluper- fect. | { Avía, Avias, Avia, | { Hauéna, Hauéui, Hañena, | { Posueram, &c. I had put, &c. |
| | { Avíamos, Avíades, Avían, | { Haueuámo, Haueuáte, Haueuano, | |
| | { Porné, oʒ Pondré, Pornás, oʒ Pondrá, Porná, oʒ Pondrá, | { Poneró, & Porro, Ponerai, & Porrái, Ponerá, & Porrá, | { Ponam, &c. I shal or wil put, &c. |
| Future. | { Pornémos, oʒ Pondrémos, Pornéys, oʒ Pondréys, Pornán, oʒ Pondrán. | { Ponerémo, & Porremo, Ponerete, & Porrete, Panneramo, & Porramo. | |

Imperative mood.

| | | |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|---|
| { Pón tu, Pónle, Pónelos, | { Pone tu, Pónle, Pónelos, | { Pone, Poneo, Pone, |
| Pónga aquél, | Pónga colui, | Ponat, Pone |
| | | to, &c. |
| { Pongámos, Pongáis, Pongan. | { Poníamos, Ponéte, Pongan. | { Put thou, put he, or let him put, &c. |

of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as PONER. PONER

Subiunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|-------------------|--|---|--|----------------------------------|
| Pres. | Pónga, Póngas, Pónga. Como | Quando Póngamo, Póngate, Póngano. | Cum Ponam, &c. Ponam, &c. | When I doe put, &c. |
| Imperf. | Pusíéra, poniá or pondría, pusíéssese, Pusíeras, poniás or pondriás, pusíéssedes, Pusíéra, poniá or pondría, pusíéssese. Como | Quando Pusíéramos, poniámos or pondriámos, pusíéssemos Pusíérades, poniádes or pondriádes, pusíéssedes, Pusíérán, ponián or pondráan, pusíéssen. | Cum Ponéssit, Ponerei, Ponéssi, Ponereſſi, Ponéſſe, Ponereſſe, Ponéſſimo, Ponereſſimo, Ponéſſe, Ponereſſe, Ponéſſero, Ponereſſono. | When I did put, &c. |
| Perfect. | áya áyas áya Como | Puēsto. Habbiā Habbi Habbiā Habbiāmo Habbiāte Habbiāno | Cum Posuerim, &c. Posuiſſim, | When I haue put, &c. |
| Pluper. | uvíéra or uvíéſſe uvíeras or uvíéſſedes uvíéra or uvíéſſe Como | Puēsto. Haueréi or Hauelli Haueréſſi or Hauelli Hauerébbe or Hauelli Hauerémmo or Hauéſſimo Haueréſſe or Hauelli Haberébbono or Hauelliſſero, | Cum Posuiſſim, | When I had put, &c. |
| First Future. | Pusíére, Pusíéres, Pusíére. Como | Puēsto. Haueró Hauerá Hauerá Hauerémo Hauerete Haueránnio | Cum Posuero, &c. | When I shall or will put, &c. |
| Second Future. | Uvíére or avré uvíéres or avrás uvíére or avrá Como | Puēsto. Haueró Hauerá Hauerá Hauerémo Hauerete Haueránnio | Cum Posuero, &c. | When I shall or will put, &c. |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

PONER,] Ponere, Mettere, Porre,] Ponere,] to Put.

Pretterperfect tense.

Avér Puēsto,] Hauer Posio,] Posuisse,] to haue Put.

Gerund.

Poniendo,] Ponendo,] Ponendo] in Putting.

Participle.

Puēsto,] Posio,] Positus,] Put.

After this manner are declined in all points Componér, to compose, yo Compóngo, I doe compose, yo Compúse, I haue composed, &c. Also Disponér, to dispose, yo Dispongo, I dispone, Dispusé, I haue disposed. And Anteponér, to put before, yo Antepongo, I doe put before, Antepúsé, I haue put before. So Proponér, to set out, to alledge, yo Propóngo, Propúsé.

of

HAZER Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as HAZER,
in Italian Fare, in Latine Facere, to doe, to make.

Indicative mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine, | |
|--------------------|---|--|--|---------------------------------------|
| Pres. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} yo H A G O, \\ tu H á z e s, \\ aquél H á z e . \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hazémos, \\ Hazéis, \\ H ázen. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Io F O, \\ tu F a i, \\ colui Fa. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Facciamo, \\ Fate, \\ Fanno. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Facio, &c. \\ \end{array} \right.$ | I doe make or doe, &c. |
| Imper. fect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hazía, \\ Hazías, \\ Hazía. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hazíamos, \\ Hazíades, \\ Hazian. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Facéua, \\ Facéui, \\ Facéua. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Facenámo, \\ Facenáte, \\ Facenano. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Faciebam, \\ &c. \end{array} \right.$ | I did make or doe, &c. |
| First Perfect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} H í z e, \\ Hiziste, \\ Hizo. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hizímos, \\ Hizístes, \\ Hizíeron. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Feci, \\ Facesti, \\ Féce. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Facémimo, \\ Facéste, \\ Fécero. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Feci, &c. \\ \end{array} \right.$ | I haue made or done, &c. |
| Second Perfect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} He \\ as \\ a \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} H é mos \\ avéys \\ an \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Ho \\ Hai \\ Ha \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Habiámo \\ Hauéte \\ Hanno \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Feci, &c. \\ vi ante. \end{array} \right.$ | I haue made or done, &c. |
| Pluper. fect. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Avía \\ Avías \\ Avía \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Avíamos \\ Avíades \\ Avian \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hauéua \\ Hauéni \\ Hauéua \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Hauenámo \\ Hauenáte \\ Hauenano \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Feceram, \\ &c. \end{array} \right.$ | I had made or done, &c. |
| Future. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Haré, \\ Harás, \\ Hará. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Harémos, \\ Haréys, \\ Harán. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Faró, \\ Farai, \\ Fará. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Farémo, \\ Faréte, \\ Faranano. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Faciam, &c. \end{array} \right.$ | I shal or will make or doe, &c. |

Imperative mood.

| | | | |
|------------------------------|--|--|-----------------------------------|
| Ház tu, Hágá aquél. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Fa tu, \\ Faccia colui. \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Facciamo, \\ Fate, \\ Facciano. \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} Fac, Facito, \\ &c. \end{array} \right.$ | Doe thou, or make thou, &c. |
| Hagámos, Hazéd, Hágan. | | | |

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

57

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coningation in ER, as HAZER.

HAZER

Subjunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|------------------|--|---|----------------------------------|---|
| Pres. | Haga, hágas, hágá, | Faccia, facci, faccia, | Faciam, &c. Cum | When I doe make or doe, &c. |
| Como | hagámos, hagáys, hágán. | Quando facciamo, facciate, facciano. | | |
| Imper. | hiziéra, haría, hiziéssse, hiziéras, harías, hiziéssses, hiziéra, haría, hiziéssse, | faceſſi, farei, faris, faceſſi, fareſſi, faceſſe, farébba, faria, | Facerem, &c. Cum | When I did doe or make, &c. |
| Como | hiziéramos, haríamos, hiziéſſemos, hiziérades, haríades, hiziéſſedes, hiziéran, harían, hiziéſſen. | facéſſimo, farémmo, faréſſi, fareſſe, faceſſero, farebbono, fariano | | |
| Perfect. | áya, áyas, áya, | habbia, habbi, habbia, | Cum Fecerim, &c. Facto | When I haue made or done, &c. |
| Como | ayámos, ayáys, ayan, | Quando habbiámo, habbiate, habbiano. | | |
| Pluper. | uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéras, or uviéſſes, uvi-ra, or uviéſſe, | bauerei, or baueffi, bauereſſi, or baueffi, bauerebbe, or baueffe, | Cum Fecissem, &c. Facto | When I had made or done, &c. |
| Como | uviéramos, or uviéſſemos, uviérades, or uviéſſedes, uviéran, or uviéſſen, | bauerémmo or baueffimo, bauereſſi or baueffe, bauerebbuno, or baueffimo | | |
| First future. | hiziére, hiziéres, hiziére, | | Cum Fecero, &c. Facto | When I shall or will make or doe, &c. |
| Como | hiziéremos, hiziéredes, hiziéren. | | | |
| Second futur. | U viére or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, | Hecho, Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, | Cum Fecero, &c. Facto | When I shall or will maſſe or doe, &c. |
| Como | uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, | Hauerémo, Hauerete, baueranno, | | |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Hazér,] Fare,] Facere, To doe, to make.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver hecho,] Hauer fatto] Feiſſe,] To haue made or done, &c.

Future tense.

Aver or esperar de hazer, } Doneſſe fare, } Faſtūrum eſſe } To make or do hereafter.
Eſſer per fare, } vel fore, }

Hauer aſſe.

Gerund.

Haziéndo] Facendo,] Faciendo,] In doing or making, &c.

R r

Supine

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Spanish of the Actine voice.

A Hazér,] Di fare,] Factum,] To make or doe.

Spanish of the Passive voice.

De ser hécho,] D'esse factio,] Factum,] To be made or done.

Participle of the Active and Present tense.

El que háze,] Faciente,] Faciens,] One doing or making.

Participle of the Passive and Preterit tense.

Hécho] Fatto,] Factus,] Made or done, &c.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que ha, or Espéra de hazer, { Hauendo a fare, { Facturus,] About to doe, &c.

Espérando per fare, { Essendo per fare, { About to doe, &c.

CABER. Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as CABER,
in Italian Capere,] Latine Continere & Contineri,]
To containe, or to be contained.

Indicative mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|--------------------|---|--|--|---|
| Pres. | { Yo Q V E P O, tu cábes. aquel cábe, | { Io C A P I S C O, tu capisci, colui capisce, | { Ego continco, tu contines, &c. Ego continuor, tu continneris, &c. | { I containe, Thou containest, &c. Thou art contained, &c. |
| | { cabémos, cabéys, cabén. | { capiamo, capite, capiscono, | { continebam, &c. continebar, &c. | { I did containe, &c. I was contained, &c. |
| Imper. scd. | { cabía, cabías, cabía, | { capina, capiui, capina, | { capiuamo, capinatę, capiuano. | |
| | { cabíamos, cabíades, cabían. | | | |
| | { cupe, cupistę, cupo. | { capi, or capii, capiisti, capię, | { continuo, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c. | { I haue contained, &c. I haue been contained, &c. |
| First Perf. | { cupimos, cupistę, cupieron. | { capimmo, capiste, capirono, | { continuo, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c. | { I haue contained, &c. I haue been contained, &c. |
| | { he as a | { Ha, Hai, Ha, | { continuo, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c. | { I haue contained, &c. I haue been contained, &c. |
| Second Perfect. | { avémos avéys lan | { Cabido. Habbiámo, Hauéte, Hámoo, | { Capito. Capito. | |
| | { avía avías avía | { Hanéua, Hanéui, Hanéua, | { continuo, &c. contentus sum vel fueram, &c. | { I had contained, &c. I had been contained, &c. |
| Pluper- fect. | { avíamos avíades avían | { Cabido. Hauenámo, Hauenáte, Hauenano, | { Capito | |
| | { cabré, cabrás, cabrá, | { capero, capiro, &c. capirá, | { continuo, &c. contentus sum vel fueram, &c. | { I shall or will containe, &c. I shal or will be contained, &c. |
| Future. | { cabrémos, cabréys, cabrán. | { capirémo, capiréte, capiránno, | | |

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coningation in ER, as CABER.

CABER

Subiunctive mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | |
|-----------------|--|--|---|--|
| Pref. | Quépa, Quépas, Quépa, Como | capisa, Capisi, Capisca, Quando | Contineam, &c. Continear, &c. | When I do contain, &c. When I am contained, &c. |
| Imper- fect. | Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéssse. Cupéras, cabrias, cupiésses, Cupíera, cabría, cupiéssse, Como | Capissi, caperi, caperia, Capisti, capresti, Capisse, caprébbe, caperia Quando | Continerem, &c. Continerer, &c. | When I did con- taine, &c. when I was con- tained, &c. |
| Perfect. | A'ya, áyas, áya, Como | Habba, Habbi, Habbia, Cabido. | Continue- rim, &c. Contentus | When I haue con- tained, &c. When I haue bee- nentained, &c. |
| Pluperf. | Uviéra, oꝝ uviéssse, uviéras, oꝝ uviésses, uviéra, oꝝ uviéssce, Como | Hauéssi, & haueréss, Hauéssi, & haueréssi, Hauéssi, & hauerébbe, Cabido. | Cōtinu- issim, &c. Contentus es- sem, &c. | When I had con- tained, &c. When I had been- tained, &c. |
| Future. | Cupière, Cupières, Cupière, Como | Hauéssimo, & haueréssimo Hauéssste, & haueréssste, Hauéssero, & haueréssero Cabido. | Continuo, &c. Contentus ero, &c. | When I shall con- taine, &c. When I shall bee contained, &c. |

Infinitius mod Present tense.

| | |
|--------------|--|
| CABER, | Capere, { Continere, to containe, &c. Contineri, to be contained, &c. |
| avér Cabido, | bauer capito, { Continuisse, to haue contained, &c. Contentum esse vel fuisse, to haue bee- nentained, &c. |
| Cabiéndo, | Capendo, { In containing, &c. In being contained, &c. |
| Cabido, | Capito, { Participle. Contentus, contained. |

VER. Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as VER, in Italian
Vedere, Latine Videre, to See.

Indicative mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|--------------------|--|---|--|
| Pres. | { YO VEO, tu Vées, aqué'l Vée, | { IO Védo & VE'GGIO, tu Vedi, colui Vede, | { Video, &c. I do see, &c. |
| | { Vémos, Véys, Véen. | { Vediámo, & Veggiamo, Vedete, Védeno, & Véggano. | |
| Imper- fect. | { Vía, Vias, Vía, | { Vedeua, & Vedea, Vedéus, Vedua, & Vedea, | { Videbam, &c. I did see, &c. |
| Como | Víamos, Víades, Vian, | Vedéusmo, Vedeáte, Vedéuano, & Vedéano. | |
| First Perfect. | { Ví ož Víde, Vifte, ož Víste, Vió, ož Vido, | { Vidi, ož Vidi, Vedésti, Vidéle. | { Vidi, &c. I have seen, &c. |
| | { Vimos, Viftes, Viéron. | { Vidémmo, Vidésti, Vidéro. | |
| Second Perfect. | { He as a | { Ho Há Ha | { Vidi, &c. I have seen, &c. |
| | Hémos avéys an | Habbiámo Háuite Hámo | Vedéto, ož Visto. |
| Pluper- fect. | { Avia Avias Avia | { Hauéua Hauéni Hauéna | { Videram, &c. I had seen, &c. |
| | Avíamos Avíades Avían | Hauenámo Hauenáte Hauenáno | Veduto, ož Vifto. |
| Future. | { Veré, Verás, Verá, | { Vederó, & Vedorá, Vederái, & Vedorái, Vedera, & Vedorá. | { Videbo, &c. I shall ož will see, &c. |
| | Verémos, Veréys, Verán. | Vederémo, & Vedorémo, Vederete, & Vedoréte, Vederanno, & Vedoranno. | |

Imperative mood.

| | | |
|--------------------------|--|------------------------|
| Vé tu, Véa aquél, | Veditu, Veda, & veggacolini, | Vide, vide- to, &c. |
| Véamos, Véd, Véan. | Veggiamo, Vedete, Vézano, & Véggano. | |

In the Subjunctive and Infinitive mood altogether as verbes aforesaid, as the Present tense Véa, the Preterimperfect Víera, veria, viéssse, the Preterperfect áya visto, the Preterplus perfect uvíera, ož uvíéssse, visto, the Future, víre, Infinitive, vér, Participle, visto.

Solc.

Solér, to be wont or accustomed. Indicat. Pres. yo Suélo, I am wont, tu Suéles, aquél Suéle, thou art wont, he is wont. Solémos, we are wont, Soléys, ye are wont, Suélen, they are wont. Imperf. Solia. Perfect. Soli. In like manner Dolér, to grieve, to be sorry, declined, yo Duélo, Dolia, Dolí, He Dolido, &c.

Of the third and last Conjugation of Verbs Irregular in IR or Yr, as
VENIR, in Italian and Latine Venire, to Come.

VENIR.

Indicative mode.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|--------------|--|---|---|
| Pres. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{yo V'E N G O,} \\ \text{tu Viénes,} \\ \text{aquel Viéne.} \end{array} \right.$ Plur. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Io V'E N G O,} \\ \text{tu viénî,} \\ \text{colui viene.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veniámô,} \\ \text{Venite,} \\ \text{Vengono.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venio, &c.} \\ \text{I doe come, &c.} \end{array} \right.$ |
| Imperf. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venías,} \\ \text{Venias,} \\ \text{Venía,} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veníamos,} \\ \text{Veníades,} \\ \text{Venían.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venia,} \\ \text{Veni,} \\ \text{Venia.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venuâmo,} \\ \text{Venuâte,} \\ \text{Venuâno.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veniebam,} \\ \text{I did come, &c.} \end{array} \right.$ |
| First Perf. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Víne,} \\ \text{Veníste,} \\ \text{Víno,} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venímos,} \\ \text{Veníste,} \\ \text{Veniéron.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venni,} \\ \text{Venéssi,} \\ \text{Venne.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venémmo,} \\ \text{Venéste,} \\ \text{Vennero.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veni, &c.} \\ \text{I have come, &c.} \end{array} \right.$ |
| Second Perf. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{He} \\ \text{as} \\ \text{a} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hémos} \\ \text{avéys} \\ \text{an} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Sono} \\ \text{sés} \\ \text{é} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Siamo} \\ \text{Sete} \\ \text{Sono} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venito.} \\ \text{Venni.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veneram,} \\ \text{I have come, &c.} \end{array} \right.$ |
| Plur. perf. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Avia} \\ \text{Avías} \\ \text{Avía} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Avíamos} \\ \text{Avíades} \\ \text{Avían} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{E'ra} \\ \text{éri} \\ \text{era} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Eraâmo} \\ \text{Eraâte} \\ \text{E'rano} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veneram,} \\ \text{I had come, &c.} \end{array} \right.$ |
| Fut. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Vendré ož Verné,} \\ \text{Vendrás ož Vernás,} \\ \text{Vendrá ož Verná,} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Vendrémos ož Vernémös,} \\ \text{Vendréys ož Vernéys,} \\ \text{Vendrán ož Vernán.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veneré ož Verró,} \\ \text{Venerái ož Verrái,} \\ \text{Venerá ož Verrá.} \end{array} \right.$ $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Venerémo ož Verrimo} \\ \text{Veneréte ož Verrete.} \\ \text{Veneránno ož Verranno.} \end{array} \right.$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Veneram, &c.} \\ \text{I shall or will come, &c.} \end{array} \right.$ |

Imperative mood.

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| Ven tu, Vénga aquél. Vengámos, Venid, Véngan. | Vien tu, Vénga colui. Veniamó, Venite, Véngano. | Veni, Venito, &c. Come thou, &c. |
|---|---|--|

Substantive mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|----------------------|---|--|---|
| Pref. | Vénga, véngas, vénga, | Venga, venghi, venga, | Veniam, &c. |
| Como | vengámos, vengáys, véngan. | Quando veniamó, veniate, vénzano. | Cum &c. |
| Imper. | Viniéra, vernía, viniéssie, viniéras, vernías, viniéssies, viniéra, vernia, viniéssie, | venissi, venirei, verrai, verria, venisti, venerissi, verristi, venisse, venerebbe, verrébbe, verria, | Venirem &c. |
| Como | Viniéramos, verníamos, viniéssemos, viniérades, verníades, viniéssedes, viniéran, vernían, viniéssen. | venissimo, venirémmo, verríamo, veniste, venireste, verréste, venisso, venirebbo, verrébbuo, verriano. | Cum &c. |
| Imper. fect. | áya, ayás, áya, ayámos, ayáye, ayan. | gia, sii & sia, sia, siamo, siáte, siano, | Venerim &c. |
| Como | Uviéra, ož uviéssie, uviéras, ož uviéssies, uviéra, ož uviéssie, uviéramos, ož uviéssemos, uviérades, ož uviéssedes, uviéran, ož uviéssen, | fojss, sarei, fojss, saressi, fojss, sarebbe, fojssimo, saremmo, fojss, sareste, fojssero, sarebbo, | Venissim &c. |
| pluper. fect, &c. | Venido. | Venuto. Venuti. | Venisse &c. |
| Como | Venire, venieres, venire, veniremos, veniredes, venieren. | Venido. | Venero, &c. |
| First future. | Uviére, ož avré, uviéres, ož avrás, uviére, ož avrá, uviéremos, ož avrémos, uviéredes, ož avréys, uviéren, ož avrán, | saró, sarai, sará, sarémo, saréte, saranno, | Cum Venero, &c. |
| Second future. | Venido. | Venuto. Venuti. | Venero, &c. |
| Como | Venire, venires, venire, veniremos, veniredes, venieren. | Cum Venero, &c. | When I shall or will come, &c. |
| | | | Infinitive |

Infinitive mod Present tense.

Vénir,] Venire,] To come.

Preterperfect tense.

Sér venido,] Essere venuto,] Venisse,] To haue come.

Future tense.

Avér oz esperár de venir { Dauer venire,
Hauer avenir, } Venturne esse,] To come hereafter.
Esse per venire,

Gerund.

Veniéndo,] Venendo, Veniendo,] In comming.

Participle of the Present and Actine voice.

El que viéne,] Venente,] Veniens,] One comming.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiu voice, &c.

Venido,] Venuto,] Qui venit,] Come.

These Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Present and Preterperfect Tense.

Infinitives.

Adormir, to fall asleep,
Dormir, to sleep,
Avertir, to marke,
Arrepentir, to repent,
Cobrir, to recover,
Concebír, to conceiue,
Cernir, to sift meale,
Consentir, to consent,
Elegir, to choose out,
Fingir, to faine,
Gemir, to grone,
Mentir, to lie,
Ungir, to annoiint,
Salir, to goe forth,
Diferir, to differ,

Pres.

yo Adúeremo,
yo Duérmo,
yo Aviéro,
yo Arrepiento,
yo Cúbro,
ye Concíbo,
yo Cígrno,
yo Consiénto,
yo Elíjo,
yo Fínio,
yo Gímo,
yo Miénto,
yo Unjo,
yo Sálgo,
yo Difíero,

Preterp.

Adormí.
Dormí.
Avertí.
Arrepentí.
Cobrí.
Concebí.
Cerní.
Consentí.
E ligí.
Fingí.
Gemí.
Menti.
Ungí.
Saly.
Diferí.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Difería.

Imperfect of the Subiunct. Diferaría.

Sofrir, to suffer, yo Sofro, Sofri.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Sofría.

Imperfect of the Subiunct. Soffraría.

The Compounds of this verbe Venir, Vengo, are declined in every respect in all Modes and Tenses throughout as it is, as Revenir, to returne, Revengo, Revine, &c. Convenir, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convengo, Convine. Devénir, to become, yo Devengo, Devine. Sobrevénir, to come upon suddenly, yo Sobrevengo, Sobrevíne.

Of the third and last Coningation of Verbes Irregular in IR, & YR,
as Dezir,] in Italian Dire,] Latine Dicere] to say.

DEZIR.

Indicative mod.

Spanish.

Pres. { Digo,
dizes,
díze,

dezimos,
dezís,
dízen.

Italian.

{ Dico,
dici, or di,
dice,

dicemo,
dite,
dicono,

Latine.

{ Dico, &c. { I say, &c.

Imperfect

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

| | | | | |
|-------------------|--|--|----------------|--------------------------|
| Imper. | Dezia, dezias, dezia, | Dicua, dicéui, diceua. | Dicebas &c. | I did say, &c. |
| | Deziamos, dezíades, dezían. | dicouimo, diceuáte, dicuano. | | |
| First Perfec. | dixi, dixiste, dixo, | dixi, dicesti, disse, | Dixi, &c. | I have said, &c. |
| | diximos, dixistes, dixerón. | diximus, diceste, dissero. | | |
| Second Perfec. | hé, as, 2, hémox, avéys, án, | Ho Hai Ha Habbiámo Hauéte Háno | Dixi, &c. | I have said, &c. |
| | | Dicho. | Dixi, &c. | |
| Pluperf. etc. | avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíades, avían, | Hauéua Hauéui Hauéua Haueuámo Haueuáte Haueuano | Dixi, &c. | I had said, &c. |
| | diré, dirás, dirá, dirémos, diréys, dirán, | diró, diráis, dirá, dirémo, diréte, diráno. | Dixi, &c. | I shall say, say, &c. |
| Future. | | Dicho. | Dixi, &c. | |

Imperative mod.

| | | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|--|-----------------------|-----------------|
| Impe- ratitive mod. | Di tu, diga aquel, digámos, | Di, op dice tu, dica colui, diceámo, | Dic, dici- to, &c. | Say you, &c. |
| | dezid, digan. | dite, dísco. | | |

Note that you shall finde with good Authors Dezi for Dezid, in the second person plurall number of the Imperative.

Subinuntive mode.

| | | | |
|---------------|---|--|---|
| Pret. Como | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
| | Diga, Digas, Diga, Digámos, Digáys, Digan. | Dica, Dici, Dica, Quando Diciámo, Diciáte, Dicano. | Dicam, &c. When I do, say, &c. |
| | | Cum | |
| | | | Imperfecta |

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

65

| | | | | |
|-------------------|---|---|-------------------|------------------------------------|
| Imper. fect. | Dixéra, diría, dixéssse, | Dixéssse, dería, | Dicerem, &c. | When I did say, &c. |
| | Dixéras, dirías, dixessses, | Diréssse, diceſſe, | | |
| | Dixéra, diría, dixéſſe, | Diréſſe, diceſſe, | | |
| Como | Dixéramos, diríamos, dixéſſemos, | Dixéſſimo, diceſſimo, | Cum | |
| | Dixérades, diríades, dixéſſedes, | Diréſſe, diceſſe, | | |
| | Dixéran, dirían, dixéſſen. | Dirébbo, diceſſe, deria. | | |
| Perf. | A'ya, áyas, áya, | Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, | Quando (ano.) Cum | |
| | Ayámos, ayáys, áyan, | Habbiámō. | Dixerim, &c. | When I haue said, &c. |
| | Uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe, uviéras, oꝝ uviéſſes, uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe, | Hauéſſe, Hauéſſi, Hauéſſe, | Quando Cum | |
| Pluper- fect. | Uviéramos, oꝝ uviéſſemos, uviérades, oꝝ uviéſſedes, Uviéran, oꝝ uviéſſen, | Hauéſſimo, Hauéſſe, Hauéſſino, | Dixiſſem, &c. | When I had said, &c. |
| | Dixére, Dixéres, Dixére, | | Dixero, &c. | When I shal oꝝ wil say, &c. |
| | Como | Dixéremos, Dixéredes, Dixéren. | Cum | |
| Second Future. | Uviére, oꝝ avré, uviéres, oꝝ avras, uviére, oꝝ avrá, | Haueró, Hauerá, Hauerá, | Quando Cum | |
| | Como | Uviéremos, oꝝ avrémos, uviéredes, oꝝ avréys, Uviéren, oꝝ avrán, | Dixero, &c. | When I shal oꝝ will say, &c. |
| | Dicho. | Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueranno, | Detto. | |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

DE ZIR,] Díre,] Dicere,] to say, to tell.
 Preterperfect tense.
 Avér Dicho,] bauer Desso,] Dixisse,] to have said or told.
 Future tense.

Avér de Dezir, { Douer dire,
 Eſſer per dire, } Dicturneſſe,] to say hereafter.
 Hauer adire,

Gerunds.

Deziendo,] Dicendo,] Dicendo;] In saying.
 Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

El que Dize,] Diciente,] Dicens,] one telling or saying.
 Participle of the Preter tense and Passive voice.

Dicho,] Desso,] Dictrus,] told, said, spoken.
 Participle of the Future tense.

Elque ha, oꝝ Douendo dire,
 Espera de { Hauendo a dire, } Dictrus,] about to say hereafter.
 Dezir, Eſſendo per dire,

The

The Compounds of this verbe Dezir, Digo, in all points thorow all Mōds and Tenses declined like the Simple, as

| Infinitives. | Pres. | Preterp. |
|------------------------------------|----------------|------------|
| Biendezír, to blesse, | yo Biendigo, | Biendixe. |
| Maldezír, to curse, | yo Maldigo, | Maldixe. |
| In like sort these following thus, | | |
| Conduzír, to conduct, | yo Condusgo, | Condúxe. |
| Introduzír, to bring in, | yo Introdusgo, | Introduxe. |
| Induzír, to induce, | yo Indusgo, | Indúxe. |
| Traduzír, to translate, | yo Tradusgo, | Tradúxe. |
| Produczír, to produce, | yo Produzgo, | Prodúxe. |
| Salír, to goe forth, | yo Salgo, | Salí. |
| Regír, to gouerne, | yo Rijo, | Regí. |

After the manner of Dezír, is this verbe Salír, to goe out or make a sally, declined, as in the Present tense of the Indicative mod yo Salgo, I goe out, tu Sáles, thou goest out, &c. Preterimperfect yo Salia, &c. First Preterperfect, Salí. Second Preterperfect, he Salido, &c. Pluperfect, avia Salido. Future, yo Saldré. Imperative Sal tu, goe thou out, Salga aquél, let him goe out, &c. Subiunctive Present tense, yo Salga, tu Sálgas, &c. Preterimperfect, Saliera, Saldría, Saléste, &c. Preterperfect, aya Salido. Pluperfect, aviéra Salido. Future, Salíre. Infinitive, Salir. Gerund Saliendo. Participle Salido.

So Seguir to follow, yo Sigo, Siguía, Sigui. He Seguido, avia Seguido, Seguire. Imperative, Sigue tu, follow thou, Siga aquél, let him follow, Sigamos, let vs follow, Seguid, follow ye, Sigan, let them follow. Subiunctive Present, Como yo Siga. Imperfect, Siguiéra, Seguiría, Siguiéste. Preterperfect, aya Seguido. Pluperfect, viéisse Seguido. Future, Seguire, &c. Infinitive, Seguir, Participle Seguido. So in all points is Conseguir to obtaine, declined.

Sumir, to drench or overwhelme, differing from Sumár, to summe vp, thus. In the Present of the Indicative all one yo Sumo. Imperfect yo Sumia, I did drench, yo Sumava, I did summe vp. First Perfect, yo Suní, I haue drencht, tu Sumiste, aquél Sumió, yo Sumé, I haue summed vp, tu Sumáste, thou hast summed vp, aquél Sumó, he hath summed vp, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR or YR, as YR, in Italian Ire or Andare, in Latine Irc, to Go.

Indicative mod.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. |
|----------------|--|---|---|
| Pres. | { VO Y, Vás, Vá. | { VO & VADO, Vái, Vá, | { Es, is, &c. I goe, thou goest, &c. |
| | { Vámos, Váys, Ván. | { Andiamó, Andáte, Vanno. | |
| Imperf. | { Y'va, y'vas, y'va, y'vamos, y'vades, y'van. | { Andána, Andáni, Andána, Andanamo, Andanáte, Andanane. | { Ibam, &c. I did goe, &c. |
| First Perfect. | { Fuy, Fuiste, Fué, Fuimos, Fuistes, Fuérón. | { Andáii, Andáisti, Andó, Andámamo, Andásisti, Andáranó, | { Ixi, &c. I went, &c. |

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

67

| | | | | | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------|-------|--|---------|-------------|-----------------------------|
| second perfect, | He, as a | Y'do. | Sono, Sei, é, Siámo, Sete, Sono, | Andato. | Iui, &c. | I haue gone, &c. |
| | Hémos, avéys, an, | | | | | |
| | | | | | | |
| plus per. | Avia, Avia, Avia, | Y'do. | Eras, Eri, Era, | Andato. | Iueram, &c. | I had gone, &c. |
| | Aviámos, Aviades, Avian, | | Erauámo, Erauáte, E'rano, | | | |
| | | | | | | |
| futur. | Yré, Yrás, Yrá, | | Anderó, &c. Anderai, &c. Anderá, &c. Anderamo, &c. Anderete, &c. Anderanno, &c. | Andati. | Ibo, &c. | I shall or will goe, &c. |
| | Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán. | | | | | |
| | | | | | | |
| Imperative mode. | | | | | | |
| | Va, & Vc, Váya, | | Vá, & Vida, Vadi, | | | |
| | Vámos, y'd, Váyan. | | Andiámo, Andiáte, Vádano, & Vádino. | | | |
| | | | | | | |

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence.
with Authors this Verbe is sometime written with Y, sometimes with I;

Subjunctive mood.

| | Spanish. | Italian. | Latine. | When I doe go &c. |
|----------------|---|--|--------------------|--------------------------|
| Pres. Como | Váya, Váyas, Váya, | Vada, Vada & Vadi. Vada & Vadi. | | |
| | Vámos, Váys, Váyan. | Quando Andiámo, Andiáte, Vádano & Vádino. | Cum | |
| | Fuéra, Yría, fuéscie, Fuéras, yrías, fuéscies, Fuéra, yría, fuéscie. | Andasse, Anderéi, Anderia, Andasse, Andereſti, Andasse, Anderébbe, Anderia. | Irem, &c. | When I did goe, &c. |
| Imper. Como | Fuéramos, yríamos, fuéſsemos, Fuérades, yríades, fuéſtides, Fuéran, yrían, fuéſſen. | Quando Andáſſimo, Anderémmo, Andaſſe, Anderéſte, Andáſſero, Anderébbono, Anderiano. | Cum | |
| | | | Iuerim, &c. | When I haue gone, &c. |
| Perf. Como | áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan, | Y'do. Quando Sia Sij Sia Siámo Siate Siano | Andato. Andati. | Cum Pluperf. |
| | | | | |

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

| | | | | | | | |
|---------------|------|---|-------|--|---------|---------------------|----------------------------------|
| Plus perfect. | Como | uviéra, or uviéssse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssse, | Y'do. | Quando Fóssi, sarei Fossi, saressé Fosse, sarebbe | Andato. | Cum Iuissim, &c. | When I had gone, &c. |
| | | uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, | | Fóssimo, saremimo Fosse, sareste, Fossero, sarebbono | | | |
| First future. | Como | Fuére, Fuéres, Fuére, | Y'do. | Quando Saró Sarás Sará | Andato. | Cum Iuero, &c. | When I shall or will goe, &c. |
| | | Fuéremos, Fuéredes, Fuéren, | | Sarémo Saréte Saráno | | | |
| Second futur. | Como | uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrés, uviére, or avrá, | Y'do. | Quando Saró Sarás Sará | Andato. | Cum Iuero, &c. | When I shall or will go, &c. |
| | | uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, | | Sarémo Saréte Saráno | | | |

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Y'R] Andare,] Ire,] to Goe.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver y'do,] Hauer andato,] Iuisse,] to haue Gone;

Future tense.

Aver de yr,] Doner Andare,
Hauer ad Andare,] Iturum esse,] to Goe hereafter.
Esser per Andare,

Gerund.

Yendo,] Andando,] Eundo,] In Going.

Participles.

Yr,] Andare,] Itum,] to Goe.

De ser ydo,] Essir Andato,] Itu,] to be Gone.

Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

Elque va,] Andante,] Euns,] one Going.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passive voice.

Y'do,] Andato,] Gone.

Of

Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined only in the third person thorowout all Moods and Tenses, as,

Indicative mood.

| | | |
|------------|-------|------------------------------|
| Present. | Ay, | There is. |
| Imperfect. | Avia, | There was. |
| 1 Perfect. | úvo, | There was. |
| 2 Perfect. | á, | { Avido, { There hath beene. |
| Pluperf. | avia, | { There had beene. |
| Future. | Avrá, | There shall be, &c. |
| Imperat. | A'ya, | Let there be. |

Subiunctive mood.

| | | |
|------------|---------------------------|------------------------|
| Present. | Aya, | When there is. |
| Imperfect. | uviéra, avría, uviéssse, | When there was. |
| Perfect. | aya Avido, | When there hath beene. |
| Pluperf. | uviéra or uviéssse Avido, | When there had beene. |
| Future. | uviére or Avra Avido. | When there shall be. |

Note that the Spaniard almost continually useth this Impersonall Ay as the French their *Il y a*, in English There is, as by obseruing you shall most vsually finde, as also this third person Compel thus declined, of Complir the Infinitive.

Indicative mood.

| | | | |
|------------|--------------------------------------|---------------------|--------------------------|
| Present. | Cómple, | Decet, Oportet, | It besemeth or behoueth. |
| Imperfect. | Complia, | Decebat, Oportebat, | It did beseme. |
| 1 Perfect. | Complió, | Decuit, Oportuit, | It hath besemed, &c. |
| 2 Perfect. | a Complido, | Decuit, Oportuit, | |
| Pluperf. | Avía Complido, Decuerat, Oportuerat. | | |
| Future. | Complirá, | Decabit, Oportebit. | |

And so thorow the third person of the rest.

Indicative mood.

| | | |
|------------|------------|---------------------|
| Present. | E's, | There is. |
| Imperfect. | éra, | There was. |
| 1 Perfect. | fue, | There hath beene. |
| 2 Perfect. | avía Sido, | There hath beene. |
| Pluperf. | avía Sido, | There had beene. |
| Future. | Será, | There shall be, &c. |

And so decline forward, as in the Subiunctive mood of the verbe Ser, Soy afore going in the third person only.

Indicative mood.

| | | | |
|------------|---------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Present. | Es menestér, | Oportet, | It behoueth. |
| Imperf. | era menestér, | Oportebat, | It did behoue. |
| 1 Perfect. | fue menestér, | Oportuit, | It hath behoued. |
| 2 Perfect. | a sido menestér, | Oportuit, | It hath behoued. |
| Pluperf. | avía sido menestér, | Oportuerat, | It had behoued. |
| Future. | avrá menestér, | Oportebit, | It will behoue. |

And so thorow the rest, &c.

This verbe Impersonall Plazér declined.

Indicative mood.

| | | |
|------------|---------------|------------------|
| Present. | Pláze,, | It pleaseth. |
| Imperf. | Plazia, | It did please. |
| 1 Perfect. | Plígo, | It hath pleased. |
| 2 Perfect. | a Plazido, | It hath pleased. |
| Pluperf. | avía Plazido, | It had pleased. |
| Future. | Plazerá, | It will please. |
| Imper. | Pléga, | Let it please. |

Subiunctive

Declining of Particles.

Subjunctive mood.

| | | |
|----------|------------------------|-----------------------|
| Present. | Pléga, | When it doth please. |
| Imperf. | Pluguiéra, Pluguiéſſe, | When it did please. |
| Perfect. | áya Plazido, | When it hath pleased. |
| Pluperf. | uviéra Plazido, | When it had pleased. |
| Future. | Pluguiére, | When it will please. |

To forme an Impersonall of the Passiuſe voice, you must take this particle Se, and the third person of any verbe thus: which particle so added, makes a verbe Impersonall Passiuſe, as,

| | | | | |
|------------|---------------|----------------------------|----------------|------------------------|
| Present. | Se Dize, | Si dice or dicesi, | Dicitur, | It is said or spoken, |
| Imperf. | Se Dezía, | Si dicēna or dicēnasi, &c. | Dicebatur, &c. | It was said or spoken, |
| 1 Perfect. | Se Díxo, | | | &c. |
| 2 Perfect. | Se a Dicho, | | | |
| Pluperf. | S'avia Dicho, | | | |
| Future. | Se Dirá. | | | |

Of Particles.

Participle of the Present tense.

In Spanish, Particibles of the Present tense and active signification, are made of the third person Present tense of the Indicative mood of the same Verbe, putting before it the Relative, El que, as El que Revéla, reuealing, Latine Reuelans: El que Entiende, understanding, in Latine Intelligens: El que oye, hearing, in Latine Audiens.

Participle of the Preter tense.

Particibles of the Preter tense, and passiuſe signification end in ado, ido, or ydo, which in the first conjugation are formed of the third person of the Present tense of the Indicative mood, by adding to do, as Revela, revelado: Ama, amado: Castiga, castigado: and in the second and third conjugation of the same Present tense, by changing e, into ido, and ydo, as Entiende, entendido: Lee, Leydo: Crece, creydo: Pide, pedido.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the word) without rule, as Factus, fecho, made: Diſtū, Dicho, said, spoken.

Participle of the Future tense.

The Future tense with this Verbe Ha, or Espéra, and the Infinitive of the Verbe, as El que ha, or Espera de revelar, Entender, or oy: Reuelaturus, Intellecturus, Auditurus, about to reueale, about to understand, about to heare.

Present.

Participle of the Present tense, and active signification. El que revéla, entiende, oye, Latine, Reuelans, Intelligens, Audiens, Reuealing, understanding, hearing.

Preter.

Participle of the Preter tense and passiuſe signification. Revelado, Entendido, oydo, Latine Reuelatus, Intellectus, Auditus, Revealed, understood, heard.

Future.

Participle of the Future tense. El que ha or espéra de Revelar, Entender, oy: Latine Reuelaturus, Intellecturus, Auditurus, to reueale hereafter, to understand hereafter, to heare hereafter.

Of Aduerbs.

Aduerbs formed of Nounes of the Feminine gender in a. Nota.

I haue handled before the four parts of speech declined. Now come we to the other fourde undeclines, called Indeclinable, beginning first with the Aduerbs, whereof some in the Spanish tongue are formed of Nounes of the Feminine gender in a, as are almost all the Aduerbs of Qualitie, as Alta, high; Altamente, highly; Graciosa, graciosamente, graciously; Luenga, luengamente; in Latine Diu, long: whiche manner of forming the Italian likewise obserueth, as Gratiamente, Longamente, Saviamente, so doth the French, making the word to end in ent, as Gratiement, Longement, Sagelement. Wherefore I think good to set downe the Aduerbs following and the rest: first, the Spanish, then Italian, after French, next Latine, and last English: every one separated one from another with this crooked line thus, — Aduerbs some be

| | |
|---------------|--|
| of Qualitie. | Fielmente,] Fidelmente,] Fidelement,] Fideliter,] Faithfully. Buénamente, oꝝ bien,] Bene,] Bien,] Bene,] well. Malamente, oꝝ mal,] Male,] Mauaisement,] Moles,] Ill. |
| | De buéna gana,] Di buona voglia,] Volutiers, de bon cuer,] Libenter,] Willingly. Volontieri volontieremente,] |
| | Much,] Molto,] Beaucoup,] Multum vel Multo,] Much. Poco,] Poco,] Peu,] Parum vel Paululum,] Little. |
| | Múcho mas,] Viapiu,] Beaucoup plus,] Multo magis,] Much more. Mas,] Più,] Plus,] Magis,] Moze. Por de mas,] Troppe,] Trop,] Nimis,] To much. Demasiado,] Troppe,] Trop,] Nimis,] To much. |
| of Quantite. | Oy,] Hózzi,] Autourd'huy,] Hodie,] To day. Ayér,] Heri ieri,] Hier,] Heri,] Yesterday. Mañána,] Domani,] Demain,] cræ,] To morrow. Antiér,] Antier,] Deuant hier,] Pridie,] The other day. El dia siguiente,] Il seguente giorno,] Le lendemain,] Postridie,] The next day after to morrow. |
| | Mucho ha,] Molto fa,] Deja long temps,] Iamdiu,] Long since. Poco ha,] Poco fa,] Nagueres,] Iamdudum,] A little since. Agóra,] or, ora,] Aceſt'heure,] Jamiam,] E'en now. Antes,] Inanzi,] Deuant,] Ante,] Before. |
| | Luégo,] Presto, Toſto,] Soudainement,] Illico, statim,] Forthwith, by and by. Núnca,] Giama,] Iamais,] Nunquam,] Never. Quando,] Quando,] Quand,] Quando,] When. |
| | Siempre,] Sempre,] Tousjours,] Semper,] Alwaeſ. Entónces,] Albora,] Donques,] Tunc,] Then. Miéntras,] Mentre,] Cependant,] Interim,] In the meane while. Súbito,] Subito,] Sodainement,] Subito,] Suddenly. Muchas vezés,] Molte volte, Molte fiate,] Fort souent,] Saſe,] Very often. Pocas vezés,] Rade volte,] Peſouent,] Raro,] Heldome. Algunas vezes,] Qual che volte,] Quelquefois,] Aliquando,] Sometimes. Qual che fiate,] |
| of Time. | A Q V I',] Qui, quaci,] Icy,] His, hic,] Heere. Ay, allí, alla,] Iui, la, cola, quiu,] La audela,] Illic,] There. A Donde,] Dow, ose,] Ou,] Vbi quo,] Whither, where. De Donde,] Onde, donde,] Dont, d'ou,] Vnde,] from whence. Acá,] Di qua,] Paricy,] Hac,] this way. Acullá,] Cola per costa,] Par dela,] Iſta, Iſtu,] that way. De aquí,] De qui, Quinci,] D'icy,] Hinc,] from hence. De allí, de allá,] Indi, di la, Quindi,] Dela,] Ilinc,] from hence. Dentro,] Dentro, entro,] Dedans,] Intrus,] within. Fuéra,] Fuori, difuori,] Hors, de hors,] Foris, foras,] without. Delante,] Inanzi,] Deuant,] Ante,] Before. Atrás,] Dietro,] Derrier,] Poſt,] Behinde. |
| | Aparte,] De banda,] al'escart,] Separatim, ſcorſum,] alſide, a part, by it ſelfe. Arriba,] Sopra, diſopra, In ſu, ſuſo,] Enhaut,] Superum,] Above. Abáxo,] In giu, giuſo, ſotto, diſotto,] En bas,] Deorum,] Beneath. Cerca,] Intorno, dattorno,] Enuiron,] Circuer,] About, nigh unto, almoſt. Cábe, Junto,] Apresso, danicino,] Prest, aupres,] Prope,] Neare unto. Léxos,] Lontano, di lunghi,] Loin,] Procul,] Far off. Encima,] Su, ſopra,] Sur, deſlus,] Super,] Upon. So,] Sotto, diſotto,] Deſloubs,] Subter,] Under. |
| | Si, as Si Señor,] Si, as Signore Si,] Ouy, as ouy Mounſieur,] Ita, ita Domine,] Yea, pea ſir, Cierto, ciertamente,] Certo, certamente,] Certes,] Certé, cerid,] Truly. En verdád, verdaderamente,] In verita, di vero, in vero,] Vrayement, en verite, cer- tainement,] Verè,] Truly, in truth, verily. Tambien,] Si bene, etiando, ancor, anche,] Si bien, ains, aussi,] Etiam, quoque,] af- well. |
| | Aates,] Piň toſto, Pluſtoſt,] Potius,] Rather. |
| of Affirming. | S I, as Si Señor,] Si, as Signore Si,] Ouy, as ouy Mounſieur,] Ita, ita Domine,] Yea, pea ſir, Cierto, ciertamente,] Certo, certamente,] Certes,] Certé, cerid,] Truly. En verdád, verdaderamente,] In verita, di vero, in vero,] Vrayement, en verite, cer- tainement,] Verè,] Truly, in truth, verily. Tambien,] Si bene, etiando, ancor, anche,] Si bien, ains, aussi,] Etiam, quoque,] af- well. |
| | Aates,] Piň toſto, Pluſtoſt,] Potius,] Rather. |

Of Aduerbs.

Of Denying. { Non,] Non, ne,] Non, neny, pas, point,] Non, haud, minime,] Non.
 Nada, No nada,] Niente, nulla,] Rien,] Nihil,] Nothing, nothing at all.
 Ni, Tam poco,] Ne,] Ni, ne,] Neque,] Neither.

{ VNAVEZ,] Vna volta, Vna fata,] Vne fois,] Semel,] Once.
 Dos veces,] Due volte, Due fiate,] Deuxfois,] Es,] Twice.
Of numbing { Tres vezes,] Tre volte, tre fiate,] Troisfois,] Ter,] Chice, &c. as in the Pronoune
 before of Numbers.
 Muchas vezes,] Spesso volte, molte fiate,] Beaucoup de fois,] Sape,] Oftentimes.
 Pocas vezes,] Rade volte,] Rarement,] Rare,] Seldom.

Of Shewing [HE A Q VI,] Ecco,] Voicy, voila,] Ecce,] Behold.

Of Encou- { EA, EA Pues,] Su, corraggio,] Sus, courage,] Age, perge,] Goe to then.
 rasing.

Of increasing { MAS,] Piu,] Plus,] Plus,] More.
 Mucho mas,] Molto Piu, molto assai,] Beaucoup plus,] Multo magis,] Much more.
 De masiado,] Troppo, di souerchio,] Trop,] Nimum,] Too much.

Of Demini- { ME'NOS,] Meno,] Moins,] Paulo minus,] Less.
 shing. { Poco, a Poco,] Poco, a Poco,] Peu, a Peu,] Paulatim,] By little and little.
 Passo,] Pian, piano,] Tout bellement, Petit a petit,] Sensim,] Soft and faire.

Of wishing. { OKALA,] O Dio vaglia, Dio volesse,] Pleust a Dieu,] Vtinam,] Would to God,
 I pray God.
 OSi,] Osé, Osí,] Pleust a Dieu que,] Vtinam,] Would to God, I pray God.

Of Asking. { PORQVE?] Perche?] Pourquoy?] Quare?] Why? Wherefore?
 Que?] che?] Quoy?] Quid?] what?
 Donde?] Oue?] Ou,] Vbi, quo,] Where.
 Adonde,] Done,] Ou,] Quo,] whether.
 De Donde,] Onde,] D'on, dont,] Unde,] From whence.
 Quando?] Quando?] Quand?] Quando?] When.

Of doubting. { QVIÇA',] Forse, a caso,] Fortuitement,] Fortassis,] Perhaps.
 Porventura,] Peraventura,] Parauento,] Fortasse,] Peradventure, Perhaps.

Of Dider. { DESPVE'S,] Poi, dipoi, Dapoi, doppo,] A pres, depuis,] Post,] After.
 Allende de esto,] Oltra a cio, oltra a questo,] Ontre ce, d'aduantage,] Preterea,] Furthermore.
 Finalmente,] Alla fine,] En fin, Finablement,] Tandem,] At length.

Of Likeness. { COMO,] comme,] Comme,] Sicut, velut,] As.
 Assi,] Cosi,] Ainsi,] Ita, sic,] So.

Of Chance. [ACASO, Por dicho,] A caso,] Fortuitement,] Fortuito,] By chance, by hap.

{ MAS,] Piu,] Plus,] Plus,] More.
 Menos,] Moins,] Minus,] Less.
 Mucho mas,] Via piu, Assai piu,] Beaucoup, d'avantage,] Multo magis,] Much more.
 Mucho menos,] Molto meno,] Beaucoup moins,] Multo minus,] Much less.
 Mejor,] Megliore,] Melleur,] Melius,] Better.
 Peor,] Peggiore,] Pis,] Peior,] Worse.
 Todo del mundo,] Piu del mundo,] Tout le mond,] Maximè,] Chiefely.

Gathering together. [IV'NT O, luntamente,] Insieme,] Ensemble,] Simul,] Together.

Denering. [APARTE,] Separatamente,] Al'escart,] Separatum, seorsim,] A sunder.

Chusing. { MAS Ay'na,] Piu tosto,] Plu frost,] Potius,] Rather.
 Mucho mas,] Molto meglio,] Beaucoup mieux,] Potius,] Much Rather.

Contrariety. { TODA vél,] Tutta via,] Tontefois,] Tamen,] Notwithstanding.
 Aunque,] Come, che, Etiaudie che, Anchore che,] Encore,] Elians,] Although.
 With-

Of a Coniunction.

73

| | |
|--------------|---|
| Withdrawing. | { AL O Ménos,] Alménos,] Au moins,] At the least. Sólo,] Solo,] Scul,] Solum,] Only. Porque,] Pur, accioche, che,] Pourceque,] Propterea,] For that. |
|--------------|---|

Of a Coniunction.

A Coniunction is that which knitteth and ioyneth parts of speach together, and is with the Spaniard almost in the same manner as the Latine, saving they hane not so many, but yet some are

| | |
|-----------------|---|
| Decoupling, as. | { Y, and E,] e,] et,] et,] And. Como,] Comme,] Comme,] Ut,] As. Tambien,] Anch, Ancho, Etiandio,] Si bien, ainsi, aussi,] Nam, Quoque,] Also. |
|-----------------|---|

Note. Note that E properly is not a Spanish Coniunction, but onely vsed for the Y, when the word following beginneth with a Y, because two YY shold not come together, La ley e la Justicia, and not La ley y la Justicia, but otherwise alwaies vse Y.

| | |
|----------------|---|
| Of Distroying. | { Ni,] Ne,] Nec, Neque,] Neither. O,] Ou,] Aut, Vel, Seu, Sive,] Either. |
|----------------|---|

| | |
|-------------|---|
| Of Causing. | [PORQVE,] Accioche, Percioche,] Pourceque] Propterea quod,] For that, Wherefore. |
|-------------|---|

| | |
|------------------|--|
| Of Conditioning. | { SI,] Se,] Si,] Si,] If. Dado que,] Se così,] Si aussi,] Si ita,] If so. |
|------------------|--|

| | |
|---------------|--|
| Of Excepting. | { SINO,] Senon,] Sinon,] Nisi,] Except, if not. Mas,] Ma,] Mais,] Quia,] But. Otraménte,] Altramente,] Autrement,] Alioquin,] Otherwise. |
|---------------|--|

| | |
|-----------------|--|
| Of Diminishing. | { AL OMENOS,] Alménos, Almance,] Au moins,] Saltem,] At least. [AVNQUE,] Ancorche, Quantunche,] Encore,] Esi, quamquam,] Although. Benche, Etiandio,] Quamvis, [TODA via,] Tuttavia, Tutta volla,] Tamen, esto,] Notwithstanding. Nondimene, Nondimanco,] Nientidemeno, |
|-----------------|--|

A Preposition.

Preposition. The Spaniard hath the same use of Prepositions as the Latines haue, sometimes by composition with another word, as Bolvér, to turne; Rebolvér, to over-turne: Hazér, to doe, Rehazér, to renew, &c. Sometime by apposition (as the Latines doe) by putting the Preposition before the Moune, as Ala corte, to the Court: Por el Rey, for the King: En la iglesia, in the Church.

Note. Note that this Preposition De, or Des, alwaies makes the word that it is ioyned with, of a quite contrary signification, as Hazér, to doe: Deshazér, to unde doe: Atár, to tie or bind: Desatar, to untie: Caniado, wearie: Descansado, resting: Dicha, happiness: Desdicha, unhappiness, misfortune: And so in the French, Faire, to doe: Desfaire, to undoe: Lier, to bind, Deslier, to unbind, &c. Prepositions of the Spaniard thus,

| |
|--|
| A,] A,] Ad,] Ad,] To, as A fe, alafe,] A fe,] Par ma foy,] Per fidem,] By my troth. |
| De,] Di, de da,] De, du,] Of or from,] as De la corte,] De la corte,] Du pa- lais,] from the Court. |
| Para,] Per,] Pour,] Propter,] For, as Para mi,] Per me,] Pour moy,] Propter me,] for me. |
| Por,] Per,] Per,] For, by or thowz, as Por mi vida,] Por mia vita,] Par ma vie,] Per vitam,] By my life. |
| Contra, |

Of Syntaxis.

74

| |
|---|
| Contra,] <i>Contra, Incontra,] Contre,] Contra,] Against.</i> |
| Contra el estadio,] <i>Contra il stato,] Contre l'estat,] Contra statum,] Against the estate.</i> |
| C A B E] <i>Presto, Appresso,] Prest, aupres,] Prope,] Hére, as Cabe la ciudad] Appresso la citta,] Apres de la citte,] Prope urbem,] Hére the citie.</i> |
| F R O N T E R O,] <i>Rimpetto, } Vis a vis,] E regione,] Outer against.</i> |
| |
| H A S T A,] <i>Fino, Sino, } Jusques,] Usque,] Until.</i> |
| |
| H A' Z I A,] <i>Ver, verso,] Enuers,] Versua,] Towards.</i> |
| S O B R E,] <i>Sopra, Disopra, } Sur, } Super,] Upon.</i> |
| |
| E N C I' M A,] <i>In il pu alto,] En la somette,] In vertice,] Upon the top.</i> |
| S O,] <i>Sotto, disotto, Giu,] De soubs,] Subter,] Under.</i> |
| E N T R E,] <i>Fra, Infra,] Entre,] Inter,] Betweene.</i> |
| A T R A S,] <i>Dietro,] Derrier,] Pone,] Behinde.</i> |
| A D E L A N T E,] <i>Dimanzi, Inanzi,] Deuant,] Ante,] Before.</i> |
| Cerca, Acerca,] <i>Circa, Interno, Attorno,] Enuiron,] Circum, Circa,] About.</i> |
| Fuera,] <i>Fuori,] Hors, dehors,] Foris, Foras,] Without doores.</i> |
| Dentro,] <i>Dentro,] Dans, dedans,] Intus,] Within.</i> |
| Con,] <i>Con,] Auec,] Cum,] With.</i> |
| Sin,] <i>Senza,] Sans,] Sine,] Without.</i> |
| Desde,] <i>From or since, as Delde la muerte, &c. From, or since the death, &c.</i> |

These following, are vsed with the Preposition De, with them, as
 Aquende de la casa,] *Di qua de la casa,] Par decà de la maison,] Ex hac parte domus,] On this side the house.*
 Allende,] *Dila,] Par de la,] Ex altera parte,] On the other side.*
 Al deredor, or Entorno,] *Intorno, Attorno,] Enuiron,] Circum, Circa,] About.*

Of an Interiection.

An Interiection declareth a sudden passion of the minde. The Spaniards vsen not so often Interiections or sudden passions of the minde; neither in their speech nor writing, as doth the French, or Italian, and yet they haue these following: Some be of
 Mirth or Reioyning. [O Bueno,] *Oh bene, he dea,] Euax, vab,] O Well.*
 Laughing. [Hi, hi, hi, or Ha, ha, ha,] *Ab, ab, ab,] Ah, eh,] Ha, ha, be,] Ha, ha, he.*
 Wondring. [O Iesus, or Valame Dios,] *O vb, vb,] Oh, oh,] Pape,] O Jesus, god Lord helpe me.*
 Griefing. [AY, ay,] *Aib, ab, abime,] Las, olas, helas, ach,] Heu, hei,] Alas, out alas.*

Of Syntaxis.

Definition of Syntaxis. Syntaxis is a due coupling together of Speech, according to the right Rules of Grammar, which the best Authors, both Ancient and Moderne, haue still vsed in writing and speaking.

Syntaxis, of the Greek word σύν, which is *con*, and τάξις, *ordinatio, quasi coordinatio*, which is construction or agreement.

But for that the Spanish (as the Italian and French) being derived from the Latine (as before said, and still kēpeth as great affinitie as Siluer and Tin, both proceeding (as Alchimists say) from Quicksiluer, or as no one can gainsay from the mother earth, or as a different Plant grafted on a strange stock or tree: It must necessarily be ordered by many Rules of the Latine, which here to repeat were lost labour and in vaine, as hath seemed to the most part of all those learned, that of any these bulgar languages haue written: Finishing their Grammars at the end of the eight parts of speech, and leauing this quite out: Which order I haue obserued, referring the Latine Reader to the Rules of the Latine Syntaxis for this part of Grammar, and other to due obseruation in reading good Authors: wishing increase to both, to their owne contents, and my selfe hereby to haue furthered both, to mine owne chiese desire.

F I N I S.

IHau for the Learners vse desirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, gathering out of them the hard Phrases and manner of speech, the vncouth sayings, together with some Prouerbs, as they fall in their places (which are the difficultie of the tongue) and explained them in English, commonly setting downe first the English, word for word as the Spanish is, then this i. for Latine, *id est*, that is to say, for the sense and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the book, that by these the Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe I set downe *fol.* and *a.* signifieth the first side of the leafe, and *b.* the second, *lin.* signifieth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you see *1. part.* it is for the first volume or part of the book, and *2. part.* for the second, &c.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of DIANA OF
Monte Mayor in 16. Printed at Antwerp, 1580.

Los de mas. *fol. 3. b. lin. 14.* The rest.

Las horas que se sobrávan. *fol. 4. b. lin. 2.* The houres which remained, or the rest of the houres.

Tomando a vézes. *fol. 4. b. lin. 6.* Taking by fits or turnes.

Paſſar por el pienſamiento. *fol. 4. b. lin. 14.* and *7. a. lin. 25.* and *26. b. 8.* To enter into the minde or thought.

Tam poco le dáva pena. *fol. 4. b. lin. 17.* Neither did it grieve or trouble him.

A vuéstro salvó. *fol. 6. b. lin. 17.* Your selfe being safe, or without your owne danger.

Como los uviste alas manos? *fol. 10. b. lin. 5.* How came they to your hands? or how came you by them?

Por tu vida. *fol. 10. b. lin. 21.* By thy life, i. I pray thee heartily.

Tomár de córo. *fol. 10. b. lin. 23.* To take by quire, i. To haue by memorie, heart, or without booke.

Favoreſcer me a mi. *fol. 11. b. lin. 5.* and Me movíera a mi. *fol. 2. a. lin. 8.* To favour me, and did moue me. Here the Spanish vseth two acculatiue cases after the verbe, both of the person; and not as the Latine, one of the person, and another of the thing.

Despues que te fuiste. *fol. 11. b. lin. 21.* After thou wentest.

Yo fuy, tu fuyste, aquél fué, nos fuy'mos, fuystes, fuérón. I went, thou wentest, he went, we went, ye went, they went. This Fuy, fuyste, commeth of the Infinitive mood y'r, to go, and the very same Fuy, fuiste, fue, &c. commeth of the Infinitive mood Sér, to be: but looke back in the Grammar and compare the two verbes together.

De ay a un poco. *fol. 11. b. lin. 28.* A prettie while after.

Que es del? *fol. 12. a. lin. 20.* Where is he? What is become of him?

Quando se pónε el Sol. *fol. 13. a. lin. 8.* When the sunne sets.

Fuéra de mi, fuéra de ti, fuéra de si. *fol. 13. b. lin. 14.* Besides my selfe, besides thy selfe, besides himselfe, or Out of my wit, out of thy wit, out of his wit.

Tén punto. *fol. 13. b. lin. 24.* Stay, hold, stop, Give me leaue a little.

Le va bien, le va mal. *fol. 15. a. lin. 7.* It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well, he is ill.

Múcho a. A good while since.

Mucho avía, mucho tévo, mucho avrá. *fol. 17. a. lin. 4.* It was a good while agoe, it hath beeue a good while since, it shall or will be long agoe.

Poco ha, or Poco fa. A little while agoe, or a little since.

Poco avía, Poco tévo, Poco avrá. It was a little since, it hath beeue but a little since, it shall or will be but a little while agoe.

Muchos dias acá, Pocos dias acá. *fol. 17. a. lin. 7.* Many daies since, a few daies since.

Mucho tiempo há, Poco tiempo há. A good while a goe, a little while agoe.

Grandes dias há, Pocos dias há. A great while agoe, a few daies past.

Cosa en la vida. *fol. 17. a. lin. 12.* Any thing in the world.

Hacer café. *fol. 17. b. lin. 21.* To esteem of, to make matter of.

Muchos ay, or Muchos. *fol. 20. a. lin. 6.* There are many.

Que os téngο dicho. *fol. 20. a. lin. 29.* Which I haue told you.

Quiso mi ventura. *pag. 21. a. lin. 11.* My fortune would haue it so.

Que de oro no les llevará ventaja. *fol. 21. a. lin. 20.* verbatim. That the vantage of gold did not carrie it away from them; i. Gold did not exceed them in brightnesse.

Diana de Monte mayor.

- Yr ala mano. fol. 21. b. lin. 28. verbatim. To goe to ones hand, i. To stop, to stay, to let oʒ to hinder one from doing any thing.
- Dedichado de mi. fol. 22. b. lin. 6. verbatim. Wretched of me, i. Wretch that I am, unhappy creature I, woe is me, wretch that I am.
- No te hâze mucho al caso. fol. 22. b. lin. 11. It makes not much matter to thee, it concernes thee not much.
- De veras. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In earnest.
- De burlas. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In jest.
- Toda vía. fol. 23. a. lin. 2. Notwithstanding.
- Hazér de industria. fol. 23. a. lin. 22. To doe of set purpose.
- Plégue a Dios. fol. 23. b. lin. 5. I would to God.
- De ay a ocho dias. fol. 24. b. lin. 6. Eight daies hence.
- No ay cosa en la vida. fol. 25. a. lin. 14. There is nothing in the world.
- Aſſi púſo per obra. fol. 26. b. lin. 11. So he did put it in practise.
- Váyan ſoſpiros a cuéntos. fol. 26. a. lin. 21. Let ſighes goe by millions.
- Y quiéra Dios que, &c. fol. 40. b. lin. 4. And would to God that, &c.
- Ambos a dos. fol. 46. b. lin. 5. Both.
- Fuéra de ſu. fol. 47. b. lin. 14. Besides himſelfe, out of his wits.
- Venir a las mánes. fol. 47. b. lin. 16. To come to blowes or ſight.
- Como en ello les fuerla vida. fol. 48. a. lin. 11. As if thereon his life lay.
- A buéltas della. fol. 48. b. lin. 13. Together therewith.
- Malaya a aquell. fol. 49. a. lin. 13. Woe be unto him.
- Ponér el negocio a las manos. fol. 50. b. lin. 24. To bring the matter to blowes or ſight.
- Que en otra cosa no entendia ſino en, &c. fol. 51. b. lin. 24. verbatim. Which in any other matter ynderſtod not, i. which thought on nothing else but, &c.
- Se dexó dormir. fol. 52. a. lin. 25. verbatim. Let himſelfe or herſelfe ſleep, i. fell asleep.
- No ſe qual me créa. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. I know not which I may believe.
- Devio ſer. fol. 53. b. lin. 25. verbatim. It ought to be, i. it could not be otherwise.
- Baſta lo hécho. fol. 54. a. lin. 16. It ſufficeth that it is done. Baſta lo diho, it is enough that is once ſpoken at, or it needis no moze words.
- Como ſupo callár. fol. 54. a. lin. 19. How he knew to hold her tongue, how well she could be mute, and not anſwer a word.
- Ni por penſamiento en ella. fol. 54. b. lin. 13. By no meanes.
- Querérme mas que a ſi. fol. 55. b. lin. 1. To loue me moze or better then himſelfe, or herſelfe.
- No es de cauallero. fol. 55. b. lin. 26. It is not the part of a Gentleman.
- Tener en mucho, Tener en poco. fol. 56. a. lin. 2. To eſteeme much, or to ſet much by, to ſet little by, or eſteeme little.
- Y quien ſe lo dixo, Se lo ſupo encareſcer de manera. fol. 56. a. lin. 25. And he that told it, could tell how to augment and amplifie it in ſuch ſort.
- Aſſi púſe por obra. fol. 56. b. lin. 24. So I put it in practise, or ſet it a woſkē.
- Aſſi me fue derécha a la corte. fol. 57. a. lin. 3. And ſo I went straight to the Courē.
- Cofas no poco guſtoſas de oyſ. fol. 57. a. lin. 5. verbatim. Things not little taſtfull to heare, i. Things not a little delightfull to heare.
- En la boz, or en la habla le conoſey. fol. 57. a. lin. 25. I knew him by his voice of ſpeech.
- La muſica dáva a otra no a mi. fol. 58. a. lin. 20. The muſick plaied to another, and not to me.
- Le déva mucho. fol. 61. a. lin. 9. verbatim. Dweth him much, i. he is much beholding to him.
- Eſta velláca de ausencia deſháze las cofas. fol. 61. a. lin. 15. This Raskals absence doth vna doe all.
- No avrá ninguna que no ſe pierde por vos. fol. 61. b. lin. 3. There will be none which is not lost in loue for you, i. which will not be ready to runne mad for you.
- Moça bonita, or bonica. fol. 61. b. lin. 5. A god wench, a fine trull, maid or girlie.
- Dár lexos de la verdad. fol. 62. b. lin. 13. To be wroide or ſarre off from the truth.
- Pareſcer me hya, or ia. fol. 63. a. lin. 12. It did ſeeme unto me. This manner of ſpeech in Spaniſh, is by the figure Epenthesis, which is the putting in of a letter or ſyllable in the middle of a word, as in this Pareſcer me hya, for Pareceria me. It did ſeeme to me.
- Dár vna palmada. fol. 63. a. lin. 13. To givē ones ſelfe a pat or blow on the breast, or else where in ſigne of wondring.
- Grangeár favores. fol. 66. b. lin. 5. To hord by fauours.
- Perdido per amores. fol. 67. a. lin. 22. Lost for loue, mad in loue.
- Si fuéſe ſervido. fol. 68. a. lin. 9. If he pleased, or liked well of.
- Vn desmayo con que avía dado el alma. fol. 68. a. lin. 27. A swooning or tranſue, with which he had given by the ghost.
- Pluguiéra a Dios. fol. 68. b. lin. 12. Would to God.
- Llegár al alma. fol. 69. a. lin. 3. To enter into the ſoule, to griene at heart.

Tomó la mano de respondéllle. fol. 69. a. lin. 9. Took vpon her to answer her, or stood by before the company to answer her.

Pusieron la mesa. fol. 71. a. lin. 15. They couered the table.

El sol se pone. fol. 72. a. lin. 5. The sunne was set.

Que áya sido parte. fol. 74. a. lin. 20. Which hath borne the cause.

Echar lo en burlas. fol. 76. a. lin. 5. verbatim. To cast it off in iesting, i. To tell it out.

A todos hazia ventaja. fol. 76. a. lin. 16. He did excell all, he did exceed or ouer passe all.

Rogando muy encarecidamente. fol. 76. b. lin. 8. Requesting very earnestly, very instantly.

Fulano tiene buen áyre, Fulano, es capatcadór. fol. 79. a. lin. 23. & 24. Such a one hath a god grace or countenance, such a one is dauncer of a Jigge.

Puesto en tanta obligación. fol. 80. a. lin. 20. Being so much beholding or bound.

Echada a la sombra, Echado a la cámara. fol. 82. b. lin. 2. Laid in the shadow, cast on the bed.

Tuviéssse por bien. fol. 82. b. lin. 8. verbatim. Did hold for god, i. Thought well of, or tooke in good part.

Mal áya amor, su arco y su saeta. fol. 83. a. lin. 11. The devill take loue, his bow and his shaft.

Passallos hiá, or ía. fol. 83. b. lin. 7. I would passe them ouer. This speech by the figure *Enthesis*, which is a putting betweene of a letter or syllable in the middest of a word, as Passallos hia, for Passaria los, I would passe them ouer. Also in Passallos, another figure called *Antistichon*, which is a writing one letter for another, by changing R of the Infinitive mood into L, a thing most vsuall in the Spanish, as heire Passallos for Passar los, so Hablálos, for Hablar los, to speake unto them: Velllos, for Ver los, to see them: Dezillos, for Dezar los, to tell them: Oydes, or Oylos, or Oyres, or los, to heare them.

Aviendo ydo quanto media legua. fol. 89. a. lin. 21. Having gone about halfe a league.

Se fue su passo a pásio. fol. 84. a. lin. 6. Went very soft and leisurely.

Los demas de los dias. fol. 86. b. lin. 2. The rest of the daies.

Y en las manos sendos vasos hechos a la Romana. fol. 90. b. lin. 3. And in their hands each one a severall vessell made after the Romane fashon.

Mesas puestas. fol. 91. a. lin. 21. Tables couered or laid.

Piedras engastadas. fol. 91. b. lin. 1. Stones enhaced.

Alçár, or quitár la mesa. fol. 91. b. lin. 4. To take by the table.

Vistieron a Felismena, vna ropa y basquinha de fina grana, recamadas de oro de canutillo, y aljofar, yncuera, y mangas de tela de plata. fol. 94. a. lin. 5. They apparelled Felismena with a gowne and petticoat of fine scarlet colour imbroidered with imbold or rased gold and pearly, a cassocke and sleeves of cloth of silver.

Escofón de redezilla. fol. 94. a. lin. 14. A coife of net worke.

Las paré des eran labrádas de obra Molayca. fol. 94. b. lin. 16. The wals were wroote Jewishe worke or Turkie worke, without Images.

Duarte. fol. 98. b. lin. 19. Edward.

Mirálde bien. fol. 101. a. lin. 1. Behold him well, by the figure *Metathesis*, which is a changing places of letters, for Miráde very common in the Spanish, in the Imperative mood, the second person, plurall number, as Leeldo for Leed lo, Beade yee it: Dezildo, for Dezid lo, Tell him that: or Dezildes for Dezidles, Tell them: so Miralda for Mirád la, Behold her, Miraldas, for Mirád las, Behold them. fol. 103. a. lin. 3.

O'jos verdes y rafgados. fol. 103. a. lin. 28. Faire and great eies.

Desde el bórea al austro. fol. 104. a. lin. 22. From the North to the South.

En quanto se hazia hora de cenar se fuéreron a una alamedá. fol. 105. a. lin. 16. And while supper time came they went to a groue of Poplars.

Mediante la quel. fol. 109. a. lin. 24. By meanes whereof.

Gentil hombre y bien tallado. fol. 110. a. lin. 13. A proper man and well shaped, and not for as English men call Gentleman.

Cava lo rúcio rodado. fol. 110. a. lin. 15. A horse dapple gray.

Traya en la ciata un alfánje. fol. 110. a. lin. 19. He caried at his girdle a Turkie sword.

Traya en el bráço ysquierdo. fol. 110. a. lin. 24. He caried on his left arme.

Bolvér sobre si. fol. 110. b. lin. 21. To come to ones selfe as out of a traunce, astonishment, or the like.

Tocár un cuerno. fol. 111. a. lin. 16. verbatim. To touch, i. To winde a horne.

Llevár el camino de los compañeros. fol. 111. a. lin. 19. verbatim. To carrie the way of his felowes, i. To take the same way, to be serued with the same sauce, to drinke of the same cup.

Túvo lo en mucho. fol. 113. a. lin. 9. He much esteemed it.

De ay algunos dias. fol. 116. a. lin. 18. From hence a few daies.

Tenerme campo. fol. 119. a. lin. 5. verbatim. To hold me field, i. To be able to stand with me, or fight with me.

Hazér campo. verbatim. To make field, i. To combat, to fight.

No se lo que hará de mi. fol. 119. a. lin. 18. I know not what shall become of me.

Diana de Monte mayor.

Tenéd entendido. fol. 126. b. lin. 2. verbatim. Hold understand, i. Understand.

Ambas a dos. fol. 126. b. lin. 27. Both.

Pléga a Dios. fol. 130. b. lin. 24. I woulde to God.

Por lo poco que se dáva por el. fol. 133. a. lin. 23. If or the little esteeme he made of him.

No se me da náda. verbatim. It giveth nothing to me, i. I care not.

Avrá como cinco o seys méses. fol. 147. a. lin. 3. It shall be some five or six moneths.

Cosa en que tan poco te yva. fol. 149. a. lin. 19. A thing whiche so little did import thee.

Me a dado de mano. fol. 150. a. lin. 26. He hath taken his leue of me.

Fálida de unas montañas. fol. 157. b. lin. 13. verbatim. The skirt, i. The side or hanging of an hill.

Vino a dár en un bosque muy grande, de verdes alisos y azebúches assaz poplado. fol. 158. a. lin. 2.

He came to light into a wood very great, sufficiently stored with greene Hallowes and wilde Olives.

Y de súbito fue a dár con los ojos en una muy hermosa ciudád, que desde de lo alto de una sierra, que de frente eståva. fol. 158. a. lin. 6. And bypona suddaine he espied a faire Cittie from the top of a Mountaine, which was right against them.

Se fué su passo a passo por una senda que junto al rio yva haza la parte. fol. 158. b. lin. 6. He went faire and soft in a path which lead neare the riuere toward that part, &c.

Sobre las cabeças, tenian sendas guirnaldas de verde yedra. fol. 158. b. lin. 18. Upon their heads they had each of them severall garlands of greene Juie.

Con cierto desdén y un dár de mano. fol. 160. a. lin. 12. With a certaine disdaine and putting from with the hand.

Dize pues que su mugér es finada que me case con el? fol. 160. a. lin. 24. Saith he, seeing that his wife is dead, that I marrie with him?

Parédi en medio bivit. fol. 190. b. lin. 28. To lie at the next wall, but one wall betweene.

Parár mientes. fol. 193. a. lin. 21. To marke, to hood.

Plazer acabado. fol. 226. a. lin. 12. Complete, or full ioy or pleasure quite ended.

Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.

Encaminár obras a personas de lustre. fol. 2. a. lin. 5. To direct workes to persons of fame.
Si Dios fuére servido. fol. 2. b. lin. 7. verbat. If God shall be served, i. If it shall please God,
De mi grádo jamas entendíera sino en solo loáros. fol. 3. a. lin. 7. By my god will I would
nener doe any thing else but praise you.

Vaya fuera toda arrogancia. fol. 3. b. lin. 12. All pride set aside.

Como a cada uno complia. fol. 7. a. lin. 2. As was meet for every one,

No les comple yfse. fol. 7. b. lin. 20. It is not meet they goe.

Con el si del matrimonio. fol. 8. a. lin. 26. With the answering to the minister yea at þ mariage.

Vámonos. fol. 10. a. lin. 10. Let vs goe, for Vamos nos.

Dexémonos. fol. 19. a. lin. 22. Let vs leue, for Dexemos nos.

Amará la sed. fol. 10. a. lin. 25. To quench thirst.

Por una cuésta abaxo. fol. 11. b. lin. 11. Downehill.

A vézes. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. By turnes, by fits.

O vala me Dios. fol. 22. a. lin. 6. God help me.

Pluguiéra a Dios. fol. 22. a. lin. 17. I woulde to God.

Dado que. fol. 22. b. lin. 21. Grant that, suppose that.

Mercéd señalada. fol. 28. b. lin. 26. A notable courteine.

El traydor del Cupido. fol. 36. b. lin. penultima. The traitor Cupid.

Tener en mucho. fol. 38. b. lin. 1. To esteeme much of.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Proverbs, out of *Celestina* in 8.

Printed at Antwerp En la oficina Plantiniana,

Anno 1595.

De mas. pag. 1. lin. 5. Duer and above, besides, mozeonier.

Recebido tienen. pag. 3. lin. 6. verbatim. They hold received, i. They haue received.

Tenér la firma del autor. pag. 4. lin. 21. To haue the Authozs name to it.

Leeldo. pag. 8. lin. 9. Reade it by the figure Metathesis, which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spanish, in the second person plurall of the Imperative mood, as this Leeldo for Leed lo, as Castigaldo, thastise him, for Castigad lo, Pedilde, require of him, for Pedidle, Oyldc, heare him, for Oyd le.

A todo corrér de véis de huir. pag. 10. lin. 11. verbatim. With all running away you ought to avoid, i. With all haste possible to run or shun.

En

En quien quépa esta differéncia. pag. 17. lin. 14. In whom may be contained or found this difference.

Conseja tras de fuego. pag. 13. lin. 3. A tale by the fires side, an old wifes tale.

Ofrecido tener. pag. 22. lin. 13. verbatim. To hold offered, i. To haue offered,

Vete, vete de ay. pag. 23. lin. 18. Get thee hence, get thee hence.

Abatíose el girafalte. pag. 23. lin. 28. The Girafalcon bated.

Los Diablos te gáñen. pag. 24. lin. 1. The Devil take thes.

Que cosa es ? pag. 24. lin. 20. What is the matter ?

Dexárle he ? pag. 25. lin. 2. Shall I leaue him ?

Matársé ha. pag. 25. lin. 3. He is to kill himselfe, or he will kill himselfe.

Desbráve, Madure. pag. 25. lin. 15. Let him pacifie or calme himselfe, let him riper or come to a head.

Si delante me tiéne. pag. 25. lin. 22. If he haue me before him.

Mudár el pelo malo. pag. 25. lin. 29. To change ill fortune.

Ves lo aquí. pag. 26. lin. 15. See it here.

De la aparéncia a la existéncia. pag. 27. lin. 14. From that which seemes to be, to that which is indeed.

No cabe en coraçon de mi amo. pag. 28. lin. 6. It is not within the compasse of my masters heart.

Que pór la boca le sale a borbollones. pag. 28. lin. 6. But that it must bubble out of his mouth.

Ha, ha, ha, & Hi, hi, hi. pag. 28. lin. 14. Voices of laughing.

Aflectar tiros. pag. 28. lin. 17. To aime.

Escozióte. pag. 30. lin. 27. It toucht you, it made you smart.

Metér por los agujeros. pag. 32. lin. 25. verbatim. To put into holes, i. to take in at windowes.

Desque se descubren. pag. 33. lin. 12. From the time they discouer themselves.

Cativo de mi, Mesquino de mi. pag. 34. lin. 20. Wretch that I am.

Aſſi me mēdre Dios, Aſſi te mēdre Dios. pag. 34. lin. 23. verbatim. So God make me thtue, i.

So God helpe me or prosper me.

Duelos tenemos. pag. 34. lin. 28. We haue mournings in hand.

Ojos verdes y rafgados. pag. 35. lin. 14. Faire and great eies.

La tez liza y lustrofa. pag. 35. lin. 24. The skin smooth and cleare.

Buen ándo haze esto. pag. 37. lin. 8. This makes god going forward.

Dias grándes ha, or Muchos dias ha. pag. 37. lin. 15. A god while since.

Quede Dios con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God be with you, or God remaine with you.

Dios vaya con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God conduct, or be your speed.

Vaya v. m. con Dios. Goe in Gods name.

Que es del ? pag. 38. lin. 15. What is become of him ? Where is he ?

Hi, hi, hi. pag. 39. lin. 1. A voice of laughing.

Tres dias ha. pag. 39. lin. 4. It hath beene three daies.

Vo, foz Voy. pag. 39. lin. 12. I goe:

Por mi vida, Por tu vida. pag. 39. lin. 27. I pray thee heartily.

Quedate a Dios. pag. 40. lin. 11. God remaine with you, or keepe you.

Sey, foz Se tu. pag. 40. lin. 21. Be thou.

No pude desclar bien, de que no te cupiése parte. pag. 41. lin. 1. I could not so much as desire, as wish any goodnesse, in which thy part was not contained therein.

Si quiera, foz Solamente. pag. 41. lin. 4.

Gelo prometí. pag. 41. lin. 28. I promised him it or that, foz Se lo prometí.

Tha, tha, tha. pag. 42. lin. 3. The noise or beating of the knocking at a doore.

O que comedor de huevos assados. pag. 43. lin. 21. Oh what a eater of roasted Egges.

De que le servías ? pag. 44. lin. 4. In what place or office didst thou serue her in ?

Curá de punto. pag. 47. lin. 18. To heale or cure with stitching vp, as with needle & threed.

Téngote lo engracia, or mercéd. pag. 48. lin. 24. I thank thee foz it.

Como quiera. pag. 49. lin. 29. Howsoever.

Dar en el fiel. pag. 51. lin. 4. To hit the pricke at shooting.

Para mi santiguada. pag. 51. lin. 13. By my halidome.

Do vino el afno, verná el albarda. pag. 51. lin. 13. verbatim. Where the asse is come, the packe saddle will come, i. where the greater doth yeld, the lesse must of necessitie come after.

A Frer I had read ouer Diana de Monte mayor, and other authors, gathering out the hardest speeches, and explaining them for the learners use, and being come thus farre in Celestine, as you see, it came into my imagination, that running thorow him, and such other hard Authors, by vnfoldeing so open to euery ones view

view the difficultest points in the tongue, might breed some dislike in men of mine own profession (to whom I wish as to my selfe) as also little thankfulness of others, who hauing their turnes serued, doe commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe some to sweeten their mouthes hereafter, as they shall be desirous hereof, and the rather, for that notwithstanding all this and more paines to, with cost out of my purse, neglecting my profession and liuing, I haue already before I came neare the preesse, tafted and had some experience of some of the greater sort (if wealth and place haue that prerogatiue) which neuer saw any thing of my doing in their life, or heard mee speake, by discourteous dealing enough to discourage mee from the publishing of any thing, to pleasure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more courteous disposed, I here goe so farre with the Englishing hereof, and some Prouerbes following, whose curtesie is friendly I finde, may cause me to the farther vnfolding of this language to his farther content.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes, in 8. Printed in Antwerp En la oficina Plantiniána,*
Anno M. D. XCV.

Lo que uno no cóme, otro se pierde por ello. pag. 2. lin. 13. That whiche one eateth not, another is lost for it, or longeth after it.

No ser mas santo que mis vezinos. pag. 5. lin. 7. Not to be more holy then my neighbours.

Achacáron a mi padre ciertas sangrías mal hechas en los costales, pag. 7. lin. 18. They laid to my fathers charge certaine tipping the sides of the sacks.

Arrimár a los buenos. pag. 8. lin. 7. pag. 91. lin. 1. To leane or stay ones selfe vpon the god.

Echár la sogá tras el caldero. pag. 10. lin. 12. verbatim. To cast the rope after the calzon, i. To cast the helve after the hatchet.

Vale te por ti. pag. 11. lin. 16. verbatim. Be of availe for thy selfe, i. Shift for thy selfe.

Par de una cola. pag. 11. lin. 26. Just eu'en with any thing.

Mas da el duro que el desnudo. pag. 19. lin. 28. verbatim. More giueth the hard then the naked, i. More giueth the miser or curmudgeon, then he that hath it not to give.

Escapé del trueno y di en el Relampago. pag. 28. lin. 23. I escaped the thunder and fell into the lightning.

No podré tener en las piernas. pag. 30. lin. 23. Not to be able to stand vpon the legs.
Dar el relox la una, Dar las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 49. lin. 15. The clock to strike one, two or thres.
Ha dado la una, Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 50. lin. 25. It hath strucke one a cloche, two a cloche, three a cloche.

En un crédo. pag. 57. lin. 14. In the twinkling of an eie.

Uña de vaca. pag. 62. lin. 1. A neats foot.

La bolsa sin maldita la blanca. pag. 65. lin. 16. The devill a penny in his purse.

Oy dia, pag. 65. lin. 24. At this day.

Quebremos el ojo al Diáblo. pag. 66. lin. 7. Let vs breake the necke of the Deuill.

Voto oí bota a Dios. pag. 70. lin. 4. I sweare by God.

Del rey abaxo. pag. 71. lin. 6. From the King downward.

Rompér çapatos. pag. 77. lin. 13. To weare out shooes.

Lancár del el demónio. pag. 85. lin. 8. To cast out the Deuill from him.

Matár con un hombre. pag. 92. lin. 6. To fight with a man.

Quien bien te hará o se yrá o se morirá. pag. 94. lin. 7. He that shall oí will do thee a good turne, either he will be gone, or he will die.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *Menosprécio de la Corte, or in French Mespris de la Court in 16. Printed An. M.D.XCI.*
per Ichán de Tournes.

Yr me a mi a la mano. pag. 70. lin. 19. verbatim. To goe me to my hand, i. To hinder, let or stop my selfe.

Ir por el atájo. pag. 93. lin. 14. To goe the shorkest way.

Dar de mano a la corte. pag. 127. lin. 20. To shake hands or take leaue of the Court. Dar

- Dár la corte a Dios. pag. 137. lin. 10. To bid the Court farewell.
 Andár en cuérpo. pag. 197. lin. 1. To goe in hofe and dounbier without a cloake.
 No es de passar entre renglones. pag. 200. lin. 20. It is not to be left obscurely, or it is to be
 plainly wrieten or set downe.
 Verdura para la olla. pag. 202. lin. 19. Herbes for the pot, pot-herbs.
 Bevér de buques. pag. 209. lin. 5. To drinke as an ox, or such beasts.
 Jugá al herrón. pag. 227. lin. 13. To play at coits.
 Corré vn toro. pag. 228. lin. 3. To bait a Bull.
 A paréy y medio, paréy en medio, com. Plauto. fol. 4. b. lin. 13. pag. 234. lin. 13. The next wall to
 one, But a wall betweene.
 Clrigio sin brevirio. pag. 259. lin. 8. A Priest without a bazarie.
 Ruár calles. pag. 273. lin. 14. To gad about the streets.
 A p'nas. pag. 289. lin. 20. Hardly.
 Embocár la bola al juego de argolla. pag. 360. lin. 2. To cast the bowle into the hole of the ring
 at that play of Argolla, i. A ring.
 Tirár coces. pag. 380. lin. 10. To knicke.
 Traér de tema la gorra. pag. 388. lin. 12. To set his hat to the god aoward, on one side the
 head.
 Sospécho que son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repoquitos. pag. 466. lin. 1. I
 suspect there are few and very few, yea most few, yea fewest of all.

Words, Phrases, Sentences, and Proverbs, out of *Floresta Espanola*, in 16. Printed in Salamanca, 1592.

- Estoy maravillado. Epist. dedicatoria. pag. 2. lin. 9. I wonder, I marvelle.
 Ellinage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava, fol. 6. b. lin. 4. verbatim. That hindred that had
 had a crowne in it never thyned, i. A Priest.
 Mas paréce chichón, que Cardinál. fol. 7. b. lin. 1. It seemed rather a welke or puzzle then a
 stripe blacke and blew.
 Rézias cámaras, fol. 11. a. lin. 18. Strong stollings.
 Macho de filla, fol. 13. a. lin. 15. A nagge.
 Vn hombre de gran memoria sin letras, tiene rueda y hiso y no estambre. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. A man
 of great memorie without learning, hath a rocke and a spindle, and no straffe to spin.
 Bolárt vna grulla o ave. fol. 43. b. lin. 5. To fite at the Herron.
 Guiñar la comida, fol. 43. b. lin. 6. To dresse meat.
 Desenfillar, fol. 53. b. lin. 19. To put out of a chaire. Also to unsaddle.
 Vnos moços de espuelas. fol. 60. b. lin. 1. Lackies or foot-men.
 A este Page o capalde o encapalde, fol. 61. b. lin. 18. Either geld this Page or give a cloake.
 Tal cádreda vaca. fol. 74. b. lin. 2. Such a chaire was vacant.
 Llámo me. fol. 76. a. lin. 15. I call my selfe, or I am called.
 Puntos de capátos. fol. 85. b. lin. 14. The stitches of shooes, or size of shooes, as nines, tens, &c.
 Alfreys lo veréys. fol. 93. a. lin. penultima, verbatim. By trying you shall see, i. By profe you
 shall finde.
 Os demande la palabra. fol. 94. b. lin. 2. Let him challenge your word or promise.
 Hazér quartos. fol. 90. a. lin. 3. To quarter.
 Parár mientes. fol. 500. a. lin. 7. To marke.
 Caldo. fol. 102. b. lin. 5. Broth, portage.
 Hazér la barba. fol. 112. a. lin. 16. To trim the beard.
 De buena gana. fol. 226. b. lin. 5. With a good will.
 Dezir grácias. fol. 234. a. lin. 18. To speake merry conceits.

Marco Aurelio.

- Sublimár, abatir. pag. 11. lin. 18. To lift vp and to abase.
 Aley de bueno os juro. pag. 27. lin. 28. By the faith of a god man I swear.
 Conviene a saber. pag. 42. lin. 16. That is to wit.
 Sobrepujár. pag. 46. lin. 11. To overpoise.
 Pendón de taverna. pag. 51. lin. 9. The signe of a Taverne.
 Jugá al axedrés. pag. 59. lin. 20. To play at Chesse.
 Ponér obligación. pag. 234. lin. 26. To binde, to make one beholding to him.
 Ponér el águila en los pechos. pag. 245. lin. 20. To put the Eagle on his breast, i. To weare
 the Emperours Armes the Eagle.

Armár çancadilla, pag. 256. lin. 2. To trip.
Cavallo de axedréz, pag. 279. lin. 26. The Knight at Chesse.

De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioso in 16. printed
at Antwerp. M.D.LV.

Fletár vna náo, fol. 8. b. lin. 19. To hire a ship and pay passage money.
Hazér a lo largo en la mar, fol. 8. b. lin. 23. To lanch into the maine at sea.
Dios te pague, fol. 12. a. lin. 11. God reward thee.
Ponér oíz Hazer lumbre, fol. 17. a. lin. 23. To make a fire.
El puerco muerto fabe mas quando se come, fol. 22. a. lin. 25. A dead hog tasteth best when he
is eaten.
Hermáno del leche, fol. 25. b. lin. 17. A foster brother.
Poco me doy por ello, fol. 28. b. lin. 19. Little care I for this.
Ordir tramas, fol. 29. b. lin. 8. verbatim. To spin webs, i. To wōzke deceits.

Comédia de Plauto Menechmos, in 16. bound with
Milite glorioso.

Para que se ténga en mas, fol. 54. b. lin. 16. That he oz it may be moze esteemed.
Ambos a dos mancebos, fol. 55. b. lin. 15. Both the young men.
No perdáys palabra, fol. 56. b. lin. 10. verbatim. Doe not lose a wōzd, i. Be attentue to that
one shall say.
Hazér de nuéwas con alguno, fol. 67. a. lin. 19. To make himselfe strange with one, when he
knoweth him well enough.

Araucana in 16. three in one volume, printed in
Antwerp. 1597.

Cúchilla de la montaña. Elogio, pag. 3. lin. 8. The edge or ridge of a hill.
Rociáda dar. Elogio, pag. 3. lin. 12. To give a volley of shot.
Como consta por sus óbras. Elogio, pag. 7. lin. 5. As appeareth by his works.
Medir la pica al enimigo, fol. 3. b. lin. 33. To come to push of a pike with the enemy.
Poblados penachos, fol. 4. a. lin. 32. Chicke plumes of feathers.
Hazérse a lo largo, fol. 13. a. lin. 10. verbatim. To make himselfe alcofe, i. To step out as men
in a quarrell to draw their weapon.
A riénda suélta, fol. 31. b. lin. penult. verbatim. With a loose raine of a bridle, i. at libertie, freely,
as Rey; a riénda suélta. To laugh freely, at libertie.

I would goe forward in this course of seeking hard places and phrases in Authoris, but
for that I haue now much other busnesse that nearer concernes me, onely certaine Proverbes
which I haue heretofore for mine owne vse gathered, and here leane some of them to your vse,
as ye shall best like them.

Refranes.

Proverbs.

First setting downe the English word for word according to the Spanish
with this word Verbatim. Afterwardif it haue a sense dif-
ferring from the word, the meaning thus, i. for
id est: that is to say.

No puede ser mas negro el cuervo que sus álas. verbatim. The Crow cannot be blacker then his
wings, i. Nothing can exceed the highest degree.
Quien a su enemigo popa, a sus manos muere. verbatim. Whosoever disdainfully dallies with his
enemy, dies by his owne hand, i. by making no reckoning of his enemy, receives dam-
age.
Quien come y dexa, dos veces pón la mesa. verbatim. Who dineth and leaueth for another time,
covers the table twice, i. He that keepeth in store, serueth his turne when he hath need.
Gran sabor es comér y no escotár. verbatim. It is great sauozinelle to dine oz eat, and not to pay
any shot oz reckoning, i. Good drinking of wine of another mans purse.

- La codicia rompe el saco. *verbatim.* Conctonsnesse burslich the bagge, i. Never thinketh it full till it breake.
- Mas vén quatro ojos que no dos. *verbatim.* Foure eyes see better then two, i. Two heads are better then one.
- Mas vale páxaro en mano que bueytre bolindo. *verbatim.* Better a Bird in hand then a Vulture flying, i. A Bird in hand worth ten in the bush.
- Entre hermanos, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los desparte, lleva la peor parte. *verbatim.* Betweene brothers put not thou thy hands; for who so severs them hath the worst of it.
- Ni de estopa buen camila, ni de pura buena amiga. *verbatim.* Neither of hounds is made a good shirt, nos of a queane a good lourer.
- Quien ha officio ha beneficio. *verbatim.* He that hath an occupation or office, hath a benefit and a benefice.
- En la boca cerrada no entra mosca. *verbatim.* In a closed by mouth a fly cannot get in.
- Mas cerca están mis dientes que mis parientes. *verbatim.* My teeth are nearer to me then my kinred, i. Neere is my coat, but neerer is my shirt.
- Mas vale ser cabeca de Ratón, que cola de León. *verbatim.* Better to be the head of a Mouse then the tail of a Lion, i. Better be chiefe in a meane place, then underling in a greater.
- Da Dios háyas, a quien no tiene quixadas. *verbatim.* God giueth beanies to them that haue no lawes to eat them, i. God sends fooles fortune.
- A cavallo comedór cabéstro corto. *verbatim.* To a greedy eating horse, a short halter, i. To a prodigall man meane fortune: a curs taw short hones.
- Dime con quien andas, y dezirte he quien eres. *verbatim.* Tell me with whom thou goest, and I will tell thee what thou art, i. Birds of a feather will flocke together; like will to like.
- En la boca del disereto, Lo público es secreto. *verbatim.* In the wise mans mouth, that is manifest is kept secret.
- Piedra novediza, no cria moho. *verbatim.* The rolling stone engenders no mosse.
- Más vale sabér, que aver. *verbatim.* It is better to haue knowledge then riches.
- Quien mal en horna, saca los panes tuertos. *verbatim.* He that setteth in the bread in the oven naughtily, draweth out the loaves crushed awry: as one breves, so let him drinke: as one plots so it proues.
- Quien da presto, da dos vezés. *verbatim.* He that giveth quickly, giueth twice.
- Miedo guarda viñay no viñadéro. *verbatim.* Feare keepeth and looketh to the vineyard, and not the owner, i. Feare makes one looke about.
- A muertos y a ydos no ay amigos. *verbatim.* To dead men and absent there are no friends left, i. Out of sight out of minde.
- La cóz de la yéguia no haze mal al pótro. *verbatim.* The kickes of the mare hurteth not the colt, i. A friends reproove never doth ill.
- A vn traydor dos alevosos. *verbatim.* To one traitor, two traitors, i. To ouer-reach one craftie knave, set two craftie knaves to him and they will copy-catch him. The Italian saith, A vn fino, un fino & mezo.
- Jurado ha el vaso de negro, no hazer blanco. *verbatim.* The bath of the Blackinore hath swoyne not to whiten, i. That which is bread in the bone, will never out of the flesh.
- En casa del mesquino, manda mas la mugré que el marido. *verbatim.* In the house of the simple soule, the wife commandes more then the husband, i. In the house of the silly man of necessarie and of force,
- The gray mare will still proue the better hōse.
- Es mas el ruy'do, que las nuezes. *verbatim.* The noise is greater then the nuts, i. More afraid then hurt.
- Dos pardales en una espiga, házen mala liga. *verbatim.* Two sparrows on one care of cozne, make an ill agreement, i. Two Competitors cannot accord.
- No es tan bravo el León como le pintan. *verbatim.* The Lion is not so fierce as they paint him, i. He is such a one as he makes shew of.
- En hora buena nace, quien buena fama cobra. *verbatim.* He is boorne in a god houre that gets himself a good name, i. A god name is better then riches.
- De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedor. *verbatim.* Under a bad cloake lies a god drinker, i. The worse outwardly attired, the better inwardly lined.
- De rábo de puercos, nunca buen viróce. *verbatim.* Of a pigs taile you can never make a god shaft, i. Bray a sole in a morter, you cannot make him leue his foliy: a Clowne will never be made a King.
- Que es este hidalgo? El que haze las obras. *verbatim.* What is this Gentleman, i. Who is to bee a Gentleman? Euen he that doth the workes of a Gentleman.
- Elasuo súfre la cárge, no la sobre carga. *verbatim.* The Ass endureth his burden, but not more then his burden.
- Amenezados pán comén. *verbatim.* Threatned men eat bread, i. The threatned men live long.

Piensa el ladrón, que todos son de su condición. *verbatim. The theſſe thinketh that all are of his condition, i. Every one iudgeth another by himſelfe.*
 Mas vale un tóma que dos te daré. *verbatim. One hold is better then two I will giue thee. Once giuing is better then often promiſing.*
 No se gana camóra en un hora. *verbatim. camóra (a ſtrong towne) is not wonne in an houre, i. Rome was not buiſt in a day.*
 Quién tiempo tiene, y tiempo atiende, tiempo viene, que se arrepiente. *verbatim. He that hath time, and looks for better time, Time comes that he repente himſelfe of time.*
 Buen coraçon quebranta mala ventura. *verbatim. A good heart breaketh ill hap, i. A good heart ouercommeth all.*
 Mundo redondo quién no ſabe nadar va ſe en hondo. *verbatim. Round world, he that cannot ſwim, let him ſinke to the bottome.*
 Malas ſon las burlas verdaderas. *verbatim. True iests are ill, i. It is ill to iest at that which was done in dœd.*
 Quién te háze fiesta, que no lo ſuélce hazér, o te quiere engañar, o te ha menefiér. *verbatim. Who ſo maketh much of thee that was not wont, either will deceiue or stands in need of thee.*
 Quién a ſolas come el gallo, a ſolas enſilla ſu cavallo. *verbatim. Whofouer eats the Cocke alone, saddles the horſe alone, i. He that will keepe his meat and his money to himſelfe, muſt do his businelle himſelfe.*
 Ház bien y no cates a quién, haz mal y guárte. *verbatim. Doe god and regard not to whom, doe euill and take heed of thy ſelfe.*
 Quién a buén árbol ſe arrima buena ſombra le cobija. *verbatim. Whofouer leaneth to a god tree, getteth a god shadow, i. Whofouer hath a ſure man to truſt unto, hath a great pleasure.*
 Quien no paréce peréce. *verbatim. Who appeareth not, periflēth, i. Out of ſight, out of minde.*
 Biva conigo y búſica quién te manténgua. *verbatim. Live with me, and ſeeke ſome other that may maintaine thee, i. Doe me ſeruice, and get maintenance where thou cauſt.*
 Hónra y provécho, no cáben en un ſaco. *verbatim. Honour and profit are not contained together in one ſacke, i. If you be honorabile, you muſt be liberall and not reſpect your money.*
 Quien quita l'occaſión, quita el pecado. *verbatim. He that taketh away the occaſion, taketh away the offence, i. He that remoueth the allurements, taketh away the ſinne.*
 La pobréza no es viléza mas inconveniencia. *verbatim. Pouertie is no vile or vicious matter, but yet an inconuenience.*
 Las quéntas en la mano, y el diablo en el capillo. *verbatim. The beads in the hand, and the devill in his capuch or cape of his cloake, i. God in his mouth, and the devill in his heart: god words and wicked dœds.*
 Palabras y plumas el viento las lleva. *verbatim. Words and feathers the wind carrieth away, i. words are but wind.*
 Ni Sávado ſin ſol, ni moça ſin amor, ni vejo ſin dolor. *verbatim. Neither Sabbath without ſunne, nor young wench without loue, nor an old body without grife or ache.*

| | |
|------------------|----------------------|
| Fuégo de eſtópa, | Fire of flax, |
| Amor de púta, | Loue of a queane, |
| Viénto del culo, | Wind from the taile, |
| Todo es vno. | All is one. |

| | |
|---|--|
| De yra de Señor y de alboroto del pueblo. | Of the wrath of a mightie man and the tumult of the people. |
| De lócos en lugár eſtrecho. | Of mad ſoſes in a narrow place. |
| De hónra menguada, y gente que no tiene nada. | Of credit decayed, and people which haue nothing. |
| De moça adeuina, y mugér latí- na. | Of a young wench a Propheteſſe, and a Latine woman. |
| Guárdate de persona ſeñalada, y de Biuda tres vézes caſada. | Of a person marked, and a widow thrice married. |
| De lodos al caminár, y de luenga en- fermedad. | Of foulie durtie waies and long ſickneſſe. |
| De viento que entre per horado, y de enemigo que ſea reconciliado. | Of wind that comes in at a hole, and of a reconciled enemy. |
| De madrasta, el nombre le ba- ſta. | Of a ſtepmother, the very name of her ſufficeth. |

